PARISMENOS:

THE SECOND PART OF THE most famous, delectable, and pleasant Historie of *Parismus*, the renowned Prince of *Bohemia*.

The aduenturous trauels and Noble Chiualrie of Parismenos, *the Knight of* Fame, *in diuers Countries.*

The second time Imprinted, and amended.

LONDON

Printed by Thomas Creede,
1605.

TO THE RIGHT HONOVRABLE, NOBLE, PRVdent, and vertuous Ladie, the Counteſſe of Eſſex, the Almightie graunt euerlaſting Honour and Happineſſe.

ANimated by the viewe of your manifolde vertues, (Right Honourable Lady) I haue preſumed to ſhroud this ſimple worke, vnder the harbor of their protection, reſting in confidence, your Honour will vouchſafe to accepte the ſame, though nor for the worthineſſe, yet for the well meaning intent of the writer, who in all dutie dedicateth his endeuours, to deſerue your Honourable fauour. Truſting your fauourable and prudent cenſure, will extinguiſh the blemiſh of my ouer-boldneſſe: and your wiſedome, receiue with fauour, what is preſented with affection.

Pythias Apollo, refuſed not to drinke in woodden diſhes: *Alexander* the great and mightie Monarke,

disdained not to trauell, to viſit ſimple *Diogenes* in his Cell. Not the gifts value, but the giuers good will, hath bene alwaies eſteemed. Euen ſo I reſt in hopefull aſſurance, that (of your own moſt Honorable and vertuous inclination to fauour learning) you will daine to take this ſmal gift, proceeding frō my hartie good will. Which I am bold to preſent to your protection, thereby in ſome ſort to expreſſe my humble dutie, which bindeth me to giue your worthineſſe a farre better preſent then this, if my abilitie were correſpondent. The dutifull regard I beare to your laudable gifts, beeing ſuch, that I am vnable (hauing no other meane) to expreſſe the ſame: humbly beſeeching your honour, to accept this gift in place of a better: and my humble and dutifull meaning, in ſteede of a better pertormance: And (according to your vertuous bountie) vouchſafe to protect this talent of my poore labours, vnder the Title of your honourable Patronage. Which ſhall bind me to inuocate the almightie, to indue your noble mind with innumerable vertues, increaſe your honours, inrich you with all bleſsings, and reward you with eternall happineſſe.

Your Honours in all duties

Emmanuell Ford.

To the Curteous Reader.

GEntlemen, according to my promiſe, I haue ſet foorth this ſecond part of *Pariſmus*, which I wiſh may prooue worthie your fauour and kinde eſtimation, the Ankors whereon my hopes depende: and though it deſerue not ſo much, yet let my good meaning therewith purchaſe the ſame. If you find any imperfections, paſſe them ouer with a careleſſe reſpect: and if ought pleaſe your fancie, let it counteruaile that which is amiſſe. If neither wel nor amiſſe, then I pray reſt indifferent: and let your curteſie be greater then my boldneſſe: and your fauour beyond my deſert. My intent was to pleaſe, but if not, my labours are ill beſtowed, and my hap the harder: If I may breed any delight to the well minded, or purchaſe any good opinion of the welwillers to learning, then I haue the reward I expect. One peraduenture will ſay, the inuention is barren: another, the Engliſh is harſh: and a third, all is naught. Yet let me anſwere in my owne behalfe, that which is lightly diſcommended, is not eaſily amended: and the worke well done, that pleaſeth all: and that very harſh that none liketh. But I ſubmit my ſelfe to the wiſe, curtuous, and learned: whom I truſt will vouchſafe to eſteeme fauourably of my good intent: that though I am not able to compare with any: yet I am willing to proue worthy: and haue taken ſome paines to procure their good opinion, vnto which I ſubmit my ſelfe. As for *Momus* mates, that are contented with nothing, yet deſire moſt: I let them paſſe as regardleſſe, whom I neither care to pleaſe, nor diſpleaſe: but if my fortune be ſo aduerſe, that I cannot procure their delight I would, then I pleade penitencie: proteſting I was in good hope of their fauour. Knowing this, that which diſagrees with ones fancie, may delight an others. So that I am in hope this poore

Treatiſe,

Treatise, may passe with the fauourable opinion of some, though not of all, yet especially of the curteous: That I still rest in hope, I shall not be frustrated in all my expectation, but reape your curteous censure, for my good meaning. And so I commit you to the heauens protection.

Your friend, *E. Ford.*

THE SECONDE PART OF THE MOST FAMOVS, delectable, and pleasant Historie of *Parismus*, the renowned *Prince of* Bohemia, *his travels with the valiant Knight* Pollipus: *in search of* Violetta.

CHAP. I.

How Parismus *after* Pollipus *marriage, departed from* Thessalie. *And of a strange aduenture befell them in* Bohemia.

AFter that *Pollipus* hadde wedded *Violetta* (as is declared in the first part of this Historie) and euerie one in *Dionisius* Court enioyed his owne hearts content, *Parismus* againe desired to see his native countrie of *Bohemia*, from whence he had beene long time absent: as also to comfort his aged Parents, who languished with extreame sorrowe, doubting that he was perished.

Parismus now determined to take his iourney by land, the rather for that *Laurana* could not brooke the seas, the passage being long and dangerous, that within fewe dayes *Parismus* (hauing with *Laurana*, *Pollipus*, *Violetta*, *Tellamur*, *Barzillus*, and two hundreth Knights, being honourably accompanied onward of their iourney, by *Dionisius* and *Olivia*, the King of *Hungarie*, the Prince of *Sparta*, and his beloued *Clariana*, Lord *Remus*, and Lady *Isabella*, with thousands of the citizens of *Thebes*,) left the bounds of *Thessaile*, to the greeuing griefe of all, especially to the King and Queen whose farewelles were cypres with greeuing sorrowes, and hearts replenished with sadnes, whose care for their welfare, and prai-

ers for their prosperous successe, were vttered with a bunãdce of teares. They on the other side, with like heaute discontentment, and lad sighes, left their delightful company, with whom they could euerlastingly haue remained, if weightie occasions had not withdrawn them. To recount their trauailes, and the countries they ouerpast, would be tedious, the rather for that they were neither crost by misfortune, nor any way indaungered, but atchieued the tediousnesse thereof, with prosperous successe, and within few daies, they arriued in the wished country of *Bohemia*, whither *Parismus* welcommed *Laurana*, with these speeches. Now most deare Lady, you set foote on the *Bohemian* soile, whither I haue long time wished to conduct you, desiring you to account both it and all therein, as yours to dispose of, and though by your departure, you left your parents in heauinesse, your friends in care, and your subiects discontẽted: yet heere shall you finde parents, whom you shall raise from heauinesse friends whom you shal comfort, and subiects whose pensiue hearts will be reuiued with your presence. Then I beseech you, let no disquiet thought trouble your kinde harts content, but esteeme your selfe both welcome and beloued in *Bohemia*, for thousãds of my subiects haue already deuoted their liues to your command. And deare friends quoth he, as my self I esteeme you, and as my selfe, esteeme your selues welcome hither, for your kindnesse hath deserued that estimation and recompẽce, that I am not able to make. And deare friend *Pollipus* my faithful partner in woe, make you account of all mine as your owne, for well haue you deserued all kinde estimation and friendship of me, whom you haue infinitly bound to you in all league of affection. The Bohemians soone had knowledge of their arriuall, and by infinit troupes came to meete them. Amongst the rest, *Aurestes* an aurient noble man, desired *Parismus* to vouchsafe him such honor, as to grace his poore mansion with his presence, & to except of his vnworthy entertainment, to refresh himself after his tedious trauailes: whose kind offer *Parismus* curtiously accepted: where he and the princesse *Laurana* were so honorably and louingly entertained, as that

she & the rest that were strangers, exceedingly maruailed ther at. The aged king and Queen, hauing intelligence that *Parismus* was arriued & in safetie, cast off their former habit of sadnesse, and banished care, which long had tormented them, and with exceeding ioy, vnwonted state, and inexplicable maiestie, went forth to meete him, royally accompanied with gallant troupes of estates. *Parismus* seeing his aged parents, with all reuerence humbled himself to them: who could haue spent many houres onely embracing him, but seeing *Laurana*, they both came vnto her, most louingly welcōming her, expressing the same with teares, proceeding from the depth of kindnesse: withall, vttering these words. Most vertuous, kind, and honorable Princesse, our words cannot expresse your welcome, nor our deedes, shewe our good will, our ioy for your presence is not to be described, and our entertainment too simple to entertain you according to our desires. Which said, the aged queen, after a louing embrace, took her by the hand, and all the Ladies of high estate, saluted her with most reuerent behauioure. The good King knowing *Pollipus*, embraced and welcommed him with great kindnesse. Likewise the Queene welcommed *Violetta*, and on euery side, all expreſt their ioy, for their happy arriuall, Bonfiers were made in the Citie, the belles roong in the countrey, and triumphes in the Court, some welcomed thē with gifts, some with myrth, some with prayses, and all with ioy and exceeding reioycings, which my dulled pen is altogither vnskilfull to describe, the king and queen, exceedingly reioyced in their sonnes vertuous choise: and in *Lauranaes* presēce. *Laurana* was affected with great delight to see their kindnesse, *Parismus* had his fill of content, and altogither greatly admired *Lauranaes* beautie, and did their best to welcome and entertaine the whole company that came with *Parismus*, with all curtesie: that the Bohemian court which lately was darkened with the mists of sorrow, was now beautified with the pleasant assemblies of knights and Ladies, that repaired thither to welcome home *Parismus*, and behold the princesse *Laurana*. In which place they continued many dayes after. But

Fortune whose constancie was neuer permanent, but disposeth their content.

Pollipus and *Violetta* vppon a day walkt forth for recreation, some halfe myle from the Court, into a most pleasant shadie greene wood, which by meanes of the coolenesse and aboundance of sweete smelling flowers, wherewith it was adorned, and by naturall sleight was so pauised, with the assistance of little twigges and spraies, that neither the heate of the sunne, nor vehemencie of winde could melest it, that the place seemed to ad increase to their delight, where they louingly sat downe, recreating themselues with great pleasure, and at last fell both a sleepe, in middest of which slumber, a rauenous wilde beare that haunted those woodes, whom extreame hunger had forced to wander so neare the Court, winded them, and guided by vnluckie fate, came to the place where they lay, readie to seize vpon the tender bodie of kinde *Violetta*, who at the very instant (by the diuine prouidence) awaked, and espying the vglie beare, suddainly shriked. *Pollipus* amazed with her crie, started vp and drewe out his sword, and rescued her from the beastes violence, pursuing him with such vigor and dexteritie, that the beare being grieuously wounded, shund his blowes, and made hast to get from him, but hee intending to winne honour by his conquest, regardesly pursued the beare, vntill he was quite out of *Violetas* sight. Who likewise fearing his harme, and pricked forward with a tender care of his welfare, followed after him, but not knowing which way he was gone, tooke a quite contrarie way, and with eger steppes laboured to ouertake him. Hee hauing with much trauell slaine the beare, smote off his head, and intending to present that spoyle to his loue, came backe to the place where hee had left her, and missing her, hee could not well tell what to thinke, hee being perswaded shee was gone to seeke him, wherewith hee was wrapt into an extreame perplexitie and doubt: fearing that if he should go to the Court to seeke her, she might in the mean time wander out of the way, and runne into daunger. Contrarily, hee

thought

thought if he should seeke her in the woode, and shée bée in the Court, his long tariance might bring her in some feare of his welfare, that in these extremities he could not determine of any thing: at last calling her with a loude voyce by name, and not hearing her answere, with all hast hée ranne to the Court with his spoyle vpon his swoords poynt, and running hastily, hée enquired if any sawe *Violetta* returne, but shée was not there heard of, which made him cast downe the beares head, and without speaking a word, returned towards the wood againe. Which strange behauiour of his, draue the Courtiers (but especially *Parismus*) into a wonderfull doubt. *Parismus* seeing the Beares head, and hearing some speech of *Violettas* absence, presently mounted a goodly steede, and with hast rode that way he was directed *Pollipus* went. *Tellamar*, *Barzillus*, and many of the Knights, followed after him, neither of them knowing wherefore they made such hast.

Parismus hauing ouertaken him, demaunded if any mischance had befallen *Violetta*? My Lord (quoth hée) as shée and I lay slumbring in this wood, the beare whose head I brought to the Court, was ready to seize vpon her, but she with a shrike awaked me, and I pursued him vntill I had slaine him: and returning to the place wher I left *Violetta*, she was gone: neither can I suppose whither, vnlesse she be wandred to seeke me: the hast I made, was to come backe to seeke her. Doe so quoth *Parismus*, and my selfe and these Knights will search the wood throughout, so euery one tooke a seuerall way.

Violetta in the meane time, still wandred on without regard whither she went, her feare perswading her, that shée heard *Pollipus* blowes and the Beare gone right before her, that with as much spéede as shée could, shée ranne quite out of the woode, but not yet setting eye on him, (the night approaching) shée was drawne into an exceeding feare of his welfare, and her owne daunger: for to goe backe by the wood she durst not, fearing least shée might againe meete the furious beast: and to go further she thought it vaine, for shée sawe no likelyhood hée was come out of the wood, and there, what with

griefe and wearinesse, she sate downe vpon a banque encombred and ouerwhelmed with a thousand cares and giuing her mind some respit to ponder on her miserable estate, for feare of her most deare Knights danger, she entered into such heauy plaints and lamentations, that euen the very woods and medowes wher into she was wandred, seemed to impart her sorrowes, & yeld pitie to her cries & scorching sighes. At which verie instant (I know not by what vnluckie destinie) *Archas* the cruell (so called for his cruell tyrannie) came to ỹ hearing of her lamentations, and drawing nigh to her, demaunded her cause of sorrow. Sir knight (quoth she) I am a stranger, that lately came frō *Thessalie*, with the Prince of this country, and this day, cōming into these woods with my Lord & husband *Pollipus*, a mightie beare encōtred vs, whom he pursuing, I haue lost & am wandred hither, not knowing which way to retire. *Archas* all this while, well noting her exceeding beautie, and swēte deliuery of speech, the gracious moouing & disposition of her eyes, which had power to pearce millions of harts, felt such an inward effect of transitory confusion in himselfe, that he resolued, hauing so fit opportunitie offered him, to trie his wits to win her loue or exercise by that meanes some reuenge against *Parismus* whom he mortally hated, vttering these speeches.

Most fayre Lady, my heart is much tormented to see the sorrow you inwardly make, for no doubt your knight is in safetie: pleaseth you to accept of my seruice, my seruāts shal guard you to the Sophyan court, where you shall find him: and my self will search the woode to giue him knowledge of your returne.

Violetta kindly thanked him for his curtesie, who presently mounted her behinde one of his seruants, giuing them secret warning to conuey her to his owne castle, which was situate in the mountaines: himselfe tooke her scarffe, which he said he would deliuer vnto *Pollipus*, as a token that she was in safetie: wherewith he departed backe into the wood, and tare the same into many peeces, here scattering one, and there confusedly casting another, & withall hast, rode an other way to his Castle.

All

soule could not eate one bit, but all things seemed to her hatefull: their sweete musicke harshe: their curteous entertainment, rude and barbarous: and that well adorned place, more loathsome then a prison: nothing but care and greefe could take place in her unquiet brest. After supper, they brought her to a most pleasant chamber, where all things were most neatly provided, comforting her with many perswasions, that *Archas* was at the Bohemian Court to expect her comming, and by reason of the nights approach, could not come backe that night, but would early in the morning bring her newes, intreating her to betake her selfe to her rest: which she did, the rather to be rid from their company, that being alone she might enter into consideration of her estate: and being by her selfe, she began to revolve in her minde, her miserable condition, *Pollipus* perill, and *Archas* intent: for her selfe she cared not, if *Pollipus* were in safetie: neither feared she what *Archas* entended, if her Knight were in health: that so many cares concurring together, so many doubts clogged her mind, and such feare possest her hart, that her words, burst into a flood of teares, and the warme blood seemed to issue from every vaine of her body, that with their abundance, she bedeawed the bed where she laie.

When she had wept her fountaines drie, she then began to accuse her selfe of folly, that would not stay in the place where he left her: then a certaine perswasion entred her heart, that he was dead which tooke such deepe rote, that of a long time no other thought would take place, which made her thinke the Tapers which gave her light, burnt blew: which likewise added a further settled resolue in her fancie, that it was so indeed. In this carefull estate, she lay tumbling and tossing her selfe, giuing no quiet to her minde: no rest to her cares: no ease to her pensiue heart: no respit to her senses, nor scope to her head: but being ouercome with sorrowe, shee continually rather augmented then diminished the same.

In this sad and heauie estate she spent the night, not suffering her eyes once to slumber. In the morning the two gentlewomen came to her again, offering her all duti full seruice which she kindly accepted. And shortly after came *Archas* counterfaiting a sad countenance, with his eyes cast downe to the earth: whom when *Violetta* beheld, a suddaine feare infused it selfe into euery part of her bodie, and she stood shaking and quaking like one transformed to heare the newes he had brought, which she thought to be but bad by his looke: who with a chaunged face,

and impudent dissimulation, tolde her that *Pollipus* was not yet returned to the Court, nor heard of, but all supposed him to bee dead. Which woords stroke such griefe to her heart, that there shee fell downe at his feete in a traunce: but when by their industry she came to her selfe againe, her amazed countenance, and lamentable grones, made the teares trickle downe her cheekes, and seeing her in that daungerous estate, conueyed her to her bedde, whose vitall sences were so abated and extinguished, that for a long time, notwithstanding their vttermost indeuours shee seemed no other wise, then as one quite bereft of sense, and in that lamentable estate shee continued many dayes.

Pollipus all that night raunged vp and downe the woodde, in euery corner, searching euche thicket and vnfrequented place, calling *Violetta* by name, and tearing both his flesh and apparell, with the bushes and brambles, that encountred his madde steppes: sometimes making haste this way, then returning backe with perswasion that hee heard her shrike behinde him, being so fully possest with feare and desire to finde her, that euery fancie that rose in his braine, altered his former thoughts: that whereas in other mens afflictions hee seemed most patient and prouident, by his owne hee was quite bereft of reason. In this vnquiet sort hee spent the most part of the night, vntill towardes morning, what with wearinesse and care that oppest his heart, he laide him downe, leaning vppon his elbowe, neither vttering woord nor teare, but inwardly stuft with extreame veration, seeming no other then the forme and picture of discontent. But when he sawe *Phœbus* display his brightnesse, he againe betooke himselfe to his earnest search, vttering such inward grones, as would haue melted a rockie heart into liquid teares.

Parismus being early vp that morning, gaue commaundement to all the Bohemian knights to arme themselues, and to post throughout all *Bohemia* in her search, and to make proclamations, with great promises of reward to them that could bring any newes of *Violetta*: that by time the Sun was vp, there were a great number of knights departed, vowing to search all places to finde her, that all the whole country was filled with report of her losse.

Parismus, *Tellamor*, *Barzillus*, presently rode to the wood to *Pollipus*, whom they found in suche heauie plight, as it made their manlike hearts to melt with griefe. But *Pollipus* espying them,

would haue fled from their sight, that loued him most dearely, vntill *Parismus* ouertooke him, and said: Most deare friend, how can you bee so vnkinde, as to shun my compame. whose care is no lesse then yours? and who tendeth your welfare as much as mine owne? haue you forgotten manhood, knighthood and curtesie? where is that vertue now become, that was wont to rule your affections? good *Pollipus*, for my sake, for all the friendship, by all the curtesies, promises, and good will, that euer past betwixt vs, leaue off this desperate follie, and listen to my counsaile: If not for all this, yet for *Violettaes* sake pittie your selfe, and recal your former sences, and let vs determine how to recouer her, that is but straied out of the way: many hundred knights are already posted into most places of this country, and will coast all *Germanie* throughout, but they will finde her: then do not you increase our further care, by this desperate sorrow, but according to your wonted wisedome, wherewith you haue counsailed me in my afflictions, let vs study how to recouer this miserie.

Oh my Lord (quoth *Pollipus*) my *Violetta* is dead, at which word, extreame hearts sorrowe, and inward griefe, stopt the passage of his speech, and was restrained with heart-swelling sighes, which being a little asswaged, he againe said: If I were sure shee were not dead, then would I willingly immitate your direction: or were I but sure death had seized vpon her tender heart, then would I neuer part from this place, though millions of diuels should seeke to driue me hence.

Why (quoth *Parismus*) how can you thinke shee is dead, when there is no likehood, signe, nor mention to bee seene thereof: neither her apparell nor any part of her body torne or any other circumstance to perswade vs to any such conceit: then why will you suffer any such perswasions to possesse your fancie? Quoth *Pollipus*, how then came the scarffe so torne? it may be the wilde beasts haue some secret dens, whereinto they haue drawne her body, and many other mischaunces befallen her, that shee was subiect vnto, and yet still bee hidden from our knowledge: neither let that trouble you (quoth *Parismus*) but rest contented, and your care that way shall some bee eased: but depart with mee to the Court, to comfort your selfe with some sport, and I will presently giue order to haue this wood so throughly searcht, that you shall plainely finde shee hath not miscarried.

Pollipus with his perſuaſions though vnwillingly, went backe with them mounting on *Teliamors* horſe, for that he was ſore trauelled and wearie of that diſquiet nights trouble.

Thus for a time we will leaue *Pollipus* returned to the Court with *Pariſmus*, *Violetta* very ſicke and weake in *Archas* Caſtle, and many of the Bohemian and Theſſalian Knights in her ſearch, to turne my ſences to write of an other Subiect, long time buried in forgetfulneſſe, the originall ſubiect of whereon this Hiſtorie dependeth.

CHAP. III.

How Pariſmenos *was brought vp in the Iland of Rockes in* Tartaria. *How his nurſe was ſlaine by a Lyon. How he liued many yeares like a wilde man, and afterwards arriued at* Andramarts *Caſtle.*

AT ſuch time as *Laurana* was impriſoned in the Iland of Rocks, vnder the gouernment of *Adamaſia Andramarts* ſiſter (as is declared in the firſt part of this Hiſtorie) the nurſe vnto whoſe cuſtody the young child *Pariſmenos* was committed, fearing his vntimely death, which *Adamaſia* threatned, becauſe his mother would not conſent to *Andramarts* luſt, ſecretly (to ſaue the child from her cruelties) fled by night into a deſolate wood, where ſhe carefully educated him according to the condition of the place, which was with ſuch wild fruite as ſhe gathered, making many a hard ſhift to ſtanch her hunger, and defend the ſweete babe from famine, vntill at length, hearing of *Andramarts* death, ſhe determined to returne to the Caſtle, and there preſent him to his mother: and to that intent, forſaking her poore habitation ſhe went as ſhe thought thitherwards but moſt vnfortunately, wandred into a deſolate and vnfrequented Wildernes: where ſhe had not long ſtaied, but met a fierce and cruell Lyon, who ſlew her: which when *Pariſmenos* beheld, notwithſtanding his infancie, her laboured with his weake reſiſtance to preſerue her: but the Lyon refuſing to hurt him, withdrew himſelfe to his denne, whither *Pariſmenos* boldly purſued him: and being entred therein, the Lyon began to wag his taile, and fawne vpon him aptly, which made him maruaile why he had ſlaine his nurſe, and would not hurt him: and made him the

more

more bolde that being wearie with trauell, he laide himselfe downe to sleepe, and when he awoke, being very hungrie, he gathered wilde fruite, whereof there was plentie, which was his foode, and the cleere water his drinke. This was his habitation a long time, taking great pleasure to hunt and chase the wilde beasts, from whose furie he was still preserued by the Lyon. Afterwards when he was growen to riper age, in his sleepe he dreampt, that his nurse appeared vnto him, willing him to forsake that vnfrequented place, and to seeke out *Andramarts* Castle, where he should finde people, in whose companie he should be brought vp.

When he awaked, he could not tel what to thinke of his dreame, nor what the ment by *Andramarts* Castle, nor which way to goe thither, being therewith drawne into a deepe studie, but suddainly hee espied a young Beare, whose sight made him quite forget his dreame, and taking exceeding delight to chase such beastes, he caught vp his staffe and followed her, and pursued her so fiercely, that at length hee slewe her: wherewith he was wandred so farre, that getting to the top of a mountaine, and looking round about him, he espied the Castle, thinking that was the place his nurse had tolde him of in his dreame, that he went thitherwardes. It chanced one of the knights that *Parismus* had left to keepe the Castle, espied him: and being of a sadde disposition, seeing *Parismenos* begin to withdraw himselfe, ranne to him and offered to lay hands on him. But *Parismenos* being afraid of his behaujor, strook at him with his staffe so fiercely, that had he not quickly auoyded his blowe, he had beaten out his braines. The Tartarian being angrie, drewe his sword, and therewith wounded *Parismenos* in the thigh, the smart whereof so inraged him, that notwithstanding all his resistance, he left him for dead.

Afterwards entring the Castle, his minde was drawne into an exceeding delight, to behold the goodly buildings and beautie thereof. The Tartarians beholding one in such straunge disguise, (for he was clad in the skinnes of such beasts as he had slaine, and his haire growne to a great length) much marueiled how he came into that countrie: withall, noting his comely personage and stately countenance, were suddainly drawn into a great affection towards him, that they saluted him most kindly, demaunding the cause of his arriuall in that place, and of whence he was: who seeing their behauiour to be more gentle then the others with whom he had encountred before, made answere so well as

he could, ꝑ he knew not: which blunt answere of his, made them mase. Withall, noting his attire, they toke him either to be a mad-man, or that he had bene Sauagely brought vp: which they were the rather perswaded vnto, for that he was very young. Notwithstanding, they entertained him, and vsed him most kindly. But his countenance, calling to remembrance, the noble Knight *Parismus*, whome hee so much resembled, that they were halfe perswaded he was his sonne, that the nurse fled withal. One amongst the rest named *Tyresus*, vsed him most kindly, apparelled him decently, and instructed him in all points belonging to cruelties: teaching him to manage a horse, and the armor, wherevnto he was so apt, and toke therein such delight, that in short space, he grew to such perfection, that he excelled his instructor in all warlike behauiours. And was so generally beloued, that nothing they had or could deuise, was too deare for him.

Many daies remained *Parismenos* amongst the Tartarians, increasing in many excellent qualities, not finding occasions inough amongst them to make triall of his manhood. Vpon a time, certaine Pyrates returning from sea, in his hearing, made report of their battailes & skirmishes, and the huge slaughters they had made: reporting how tragically they murdred some of the resistance, and how valiantly some withstood them, and with what trauell they indured the fight. Making particular rehearsall of one Captaine amongst the rest, who so valiantly withstood them, that before they could vanquish him hee had slaine aboue twentie of them: but in the ende, seeing that by reason of their multitude, hee must needes either be taken prisoner, or die, hee rather chose an honourable death, then to become their captiue, and indured the fight, vntill with faintnesse he fell downe dead, euen as hee was aduancing his sword to resist them. Which report of theirs kindled such honourable sparks in *Parismenos* breast, that hee extreamely thirsted to see those braue skirmishes, accounting it dishonourable for him to spend his dayes in that obscure place: his thoughts still aymed at higher matters, and his fancie perswading him, that he should rather spend his time in heroicall exercises in Kings courts, then in that vnfrequented place, where no pleasing attempt of martiall deedes was exercised: which thoughts took such effect, that he presently determined to seeke aduentures abroad: and comming to *Tyresus* (who loued him dearely) he told him his whole intent, asking his aduise therein. *Tyresus* seeing such resolued valour in him, tolde him, that he was both

ready

ready and willing to doe any thing that might agree to his fancie, or purchaſe his content: that if he deſired to trauaile and hazard himſelfe by ſea he was readie to goe with him: or if he were determined to ſeek ſtrange aduentures by land he would likewiſe trauaile with him, and forſake no perill for his ſake.

Pariſmenos hearing his curteous reply, could not chuſe but embrace him, yeelding him many thankes. *Tyreſius* effected all things with ſuch ſpeede, and ſo well ordered his affaires to further his intent, that within fewe dayes they departed into a thippe, well manned and victualled, hoiſing their ſailes, with a merry gale, committed themſelues to the mercies of the ſeas. They ſayled many dayes without any aduenture, which inwardly fretted *Pariſmenos*, for his minde longed to perſorme ſome exployt. At laſt they kenned a ſayle a farre off, and towards it they ſtirred amaine: and comming nigh the ſhip, laide her aboord, which was of *Barbaria*, well manned with ſtout Moores: who ſeing the Pyrates, and knowing, that either they muſt reſolutely fight it out, or become captiues, valiantly reſiſted them: betweene whom, began a moſt fierce & cruel fight: where *Pariſmenos* had meanes inough to exerciſe his valour, who behaued himſelfe with ſuch courage, that many Moores that day loſt their liues by his inſant blowes.

Egradam Captain of the Moores, being a man of exceeding courage, ſeing the cruell ſlaughter *Pariſmenos* made, came to him, and vttered theſe ſpeeches. Proude Pyrate, thou ſhalt dearely buye theſe Moores liues, for I am determined to bring thy curſed life to an end, that thinkeſt by robbery to enrich thy ſelfe. Wherewith hee aſſayled him ſo fiercely, that he wounded him in many places: notwithſtanding, ſuch was his valour, that with great force he likewiſe ſo valiantly defended himſelfe, and offending *Egradam*, that it was doubtfull which of them ſhould haue the conqueſt. In middeſt of this cruell fight, a mightie ſtorme began ſuddainly to ariſe, and the windes began to blow with violence, that their Cables burſt and both light of day and Sunne was ſhadowed by thicke Cloudes, the ſeas began to rage and ſwell that they were inforced to giue ouer their fight, the thunders rored, and the lightnings flaſht about their eares, and their ſhip with violence of the ſurgious ſeas was ſo toſt, that there was none but expected preſent death. The Northerne blaſt, rent their ſayles, one way goeth their Helme, another way ſwimmeth their maſt, with violence torne from their ſhip, & wane vpon wane ruſht in, readie to ouerturne the ſhip, who now falling

vpon

vpon the seas at libertie, was driuen vppon a flintie rocke and split in sunder. Then beganne a hideous crie amongst the soulders, some cursing *Parismenos* the causer of that iourney, some exclaiming on *Tyresus*, and some banning their owne destinies. Some whelmed vnder the gaping water, yeeld vp their ghostes: here there at once are cast vpon the rockes, and againe deuoured by the waues: there others sonke in the quicke sands, and downe fals the Maister headlong: then might you behold men swim in their armour: here and there striuing to make their death tedious: there might you see one seated vpon a planke, ouerthrown with a wane: here another tumbling with his heeles vpward. *Parismenos* (by good fortune) was gotten vp to the maste, whose length had some power to indure the waues, with his sword still drawne in his hand. *Tyresus* he was gotten on to a cheft, wherewith a while he applied himself from drowning, but in the end, the raging waues drenched him deep in their spatious gulfes. Within a while the raging seas began to cease and ware calme, the sunne beganne to shine, and the cloudes to banish that darkened the skies, and the maste whereon *Parismenos* sate, beganne to slide along with the calme tide: when he loked about him, and espied all his fellowes drowned, an exceeding sorrow ouerwhelmed his heart, especially for his louing friend *Tyresus*, that had not the feare he was in reuiued his sences, he would haue wayt careleffe of his owne life. But the remembrance of his peril made him recall his better sences to their former vse, and to studie for his owne safetie, to whom the seas were so mercifull, that with a gentle and calme tide he was driuen to shore, where getting to a sunnie banke, he sate him downe to refresh his wearied limmes, and ponder his happie escape from drowning, drying his gaping wounds with such linnen as he had about him, who with the salt water smarted exceedingly.

CHAP. IIII.

How Parismenos *being cast on shore in* Trace, *was taken vp by Duke* Arnalcus, *who named him the knight of Fame: of two combats hee fought with Corus and Argalus.*

As *Parismenos* was sitting vpon the banke after his shipwrack, in heauie estate for the losse of his deare friend *Tyresus*, it happened, an ancient Duke of *Thrace*, named *Arnasenus*, that day was

was come into a forrest adioyning to the sea to hunt, accompanied by a gallant troupe of Knights, who theltring himselfe from the storme vnder the craggie cliffes, beheld the miserable shipwracke, and sawe *Parismenos* swim to shore, and so straungely preserued from drowning, vnto whom he came as hee was sitting vppon a sunnie bancke, and demaunded of whence he was. *Parismenos* beholding his reuerend age, and the troupe of Knights that attended him, rose from the ground, and with great humilitie bowed his bodie, making this aunswere. I am a miserable man, by crueltie of the seas cast on this shore, hauing lost my faithfull friend, drenched in the spacious gulfes, beeing my selfe reserued to further miseries, my name is hidden from my selfe, neither know I certainly in what countrie I was borne, nor where my Parents remaine, and now am cast into an vnknowne place, and miserably left to the wide world, to indure such hard fortune as my vnluckie starres haue allotted me.

Amasenus hearing his answere, and withall, noting his tall and comely proportion and beautifull countenance, thought by his speech that his sences were altered with feare of the tempest, and care for the losse of his friends, that he thus replyed. I perceiue feare of drowning hath made you forget both yourselfe, your name, and countrie which feare now shake off, since all the perill is past, and leaue to greeue for their lost that are irrecouerable, and go with me to my Castle, and to such entertainment as the same yeeldeth, you shal be welcome. I most humbly thanke you (quoth he) for this kindnesse, but whereas you thinke, that feare hath made me forget my selfe, you altogither ayme amisse, for I haue reported of my selfe nothing but trueth. Then stept forth *Corus* (a suspitious and enuious Knight) my Lord (quoth hee) it is some Pirate that liueth by spoyle of passengers, and hath heeretofore don you some mischief, which maketh him thus cunningly dissemble.

Parismenos hearing his speeches, could not containe himselfe but made this answere. Most discourteous Knight, neither thy selfe, nor any in this countrie whatsoeuer, shal make me dissemble, or once falsifie my word, and were it not that the strangers of this place, and the reuerence I beare to this curteous Lord, withholdeth me, I would eneu presently make thee eate that word & turne it backe into thy dishonorable throat. *Corus* beeing a Knight of a proude courage, was so vexed with that reply, that he intreated *Amasenus* to giue him leaue to re-

wenge those iniurious wordes. Say quoth *Amasenus*, and leaue off this discourteous behauiour to strangers, heere is neither place nor time, for you see hee is wearied with shipwracke, and faint with effusion of blood: thy pride and discourteous behauiour will one day be thy death: had he done me wrong, yet he hath not offended thee. Then he said to *Parismenos*: Sir Knight, I pray cease this discontent, and goe to my Castle, for so well do I esteeme of you, and so farre am I from the least suppose of any such thought, as my selfe will vndertake his accusation is false. So they departed together. *Parismenos* by the way, so well as he could declared his birth, which made *Amasenus* make greater estimation of him, for by all tokens he thought he should be sprung of kingly race, that *Amasenus* entertained him most honourably and kindely, and welcommed him in the best sort hee could deuise, which made him disdained amongst many of the knights that attended the Duke, and seeing him so highly esteemed, beganne to suspect by that meanes, that they were but slightly accounted of by *Amasenus*, that euer after that, they beganne to enuie him, and to consult which way to do them a mischiefe: thinking *Corus* quarrell already begun, a fit occasion to further their intent, they urged him to prosecute the same, who being ready of himselfe, and the rather by their instigation, sent him this challenge.

Knight (for so I must call thee) thou remembrest what past betwixt vs at our first meeting, which thou thinkest I haue forgot, but so farre is it from my thought, as courage is from thee to performe that which thou threatnedst; thy feare of drowning is now, and thy deepe woundes I am sure well cured, therefore if thou dare maintaine the wordes thou hast spoken in my disgrace, send me word where I shall meete thee, and there we will ende the controuersie. So farewell.

As thou wilt, *Corus*.

Parismenos hauing read this braue challenge, smiling thereat, sent this replie.

Corus, *by the name of the vnknowne Knight, I will answere thee, and maintaine my wordes, wishing thee to bee perswaded, that I so little feare thy vaunts, as that euen now I will come to thee, or*

when

when thou wilt, if not now. But if thou intendest to auouch this challenge, thou shalt finde mee readie for thee at the South side of my Lord Amasenus *parke. And so adue.*

The King of Fame.

Corus hauing receiued this reply, presently went and armed himselfe, and came to the appointed place, where hee found the Knight of Fame gallantly mounted, staying for him whom he little esteemed, as that he assured himselfe the conquest before he begunne: for *Parismenos* was young and of tender yeares, and nothing comparable to him in growth nor skill, notwithstanding, of such vndaunted resolue, that he would not haue refused to cope with him, had he been another *Hercules*. *Corus* seeing him in that readinesse, came to him, vttering these speeches Knight, I like well thy forwardnesse, and commend thy resolution, but by that time thou departest hence, thou wilt repent thy folly.

Parismenos thus answered, if I repent mee, the worst will bee mine, but if I ayme not amisse, thy folly wil be the greatest: for know, that I so lightly esteemed thy speeches, that I account them ridiculous, and this time spent in prate too tedious. With that *Coras* went backe, and *Parismenos* retired himselfe to take their careir, which was performed so gallantly, as that they shiuered their lances, passing by without any other harme, presently drawing their keene swords, beginning fight with gallant brauerie, sometimes offending, and sometimes defending, which continued so long, vntill their armour beganne to yeeld to their fierce blowes, and the blood to issue out at many places. In which cruell rage they continued for an houres space, without any disaduantage on either partie, sometimes taking breath, and then againe redoubling their blowes with fresh courage, that *Corus* fretting at his enemies valour, and calling to minde his former speeches, strooke so mightie a blow at him, that with the force thereof, he made him stagger, which turned *Parismenos* sences into such furie, that aduancing himselfe in his stirropes, hee strooke *Corus* so full and so valiantly on the Crest, that he was astonish therewith: yet notwithstanding with quick courage soon recouered his memorie again, prosecuting his blows with great fortitude, vntill that both their armour and steedes beganne to be

coloured with the purple blood that issued from their wounds: both of them waxing faint, yet neyther willing to yeelde. Sometimes the one driuing his enemie to retyre, and hee againe returning with new courage. But *Parismenos* being the nimbler of bodie, warded many of *Corus* blowes, and in the end wounded him so sore, that hee beganne to stagger too and fro, to saue himselfe from his furie, who still pursued him with such violence, that *Corus* with faintnesse fell on his horse necke: which hee espying, was lifting his sword to fetch a fresh blowe to ende his life, but that hee heard one call to him to stay, and looking backe, saw that it was *Amasenus*: who missing him, being tolde that hee departed from the Castle in Armour followed him to the place, and had all that while stayed couertly and beheld the combat, and seeing the daunger *Corus* was in, desired *Parismenos* to spare his life, who according to his request desisted. *Amasenus* then caused his Knightes to take vp *Corus* fallen from his horse in a trance, who receiuing fresh ayre, came to himselfe againe: but when hee saw the Duke present, and his enemie still mounted and in a good estate, his heart was ready to burst with inward greefe, which malicious ranckour filled vp all his sences, that cursing himselfe and his ill fortune, hee yeelded vp his fainting ghost Farewell (quoth *Amasenus*) the most proude and discorteous Knight that euer liued in *Thrace*, thy insolence and malicious discontented enuie, hath wrought thine owne downe fall. And most noble Knight (quoth hee) to *Parismenos* I both honour your valour, and applaude your victorie, wherein you haue behaued your selfe so valiantly, as I shall for euer loue you: and since you remaine victor, I praye returne with mee to haue your wounds cured *Parismenos* humbly thanking him departed: and the cest of *Amasenus* Knightes tooke vp *Corsus* bodie, which afterwards they buried with great solemnitie. After *Corsus* death the Knights that enuied *Parismenos*, now beganne to imagine assuredly that the Knight would darken all their glories, and the more account they saw the D. make of him, the more their malicious enuy increased, that they deuised all the meanes they coulde to contriue his death, whatsoeuer insued thereon waiting all opportunities. But hee hauing his woundes fully cured, forsooke his chamber and betook himself again to his wonted exercises, which was, sometimes to mannage the sturdie steede, and sometimes to sport himselfe (in companie of his vnknowne enemies) amongst the Ladies and Gentlewomen, who liked his behauiour and courtesie so well, besides his comely proportion, the sweete youth so greatly pleased their

fancies,

fancies, that they accounted the Thracian knights rude in respect o, him, all both liking, loving, and commending him, and that so openly that his enemies might heare their speeches, which wrought such a vis lent effect of rancor, that no thought could harbour in their breasts, but tragicall deuises to worke his downfall. One amongst the rest neare kinsman to *Corus*, named *Argalus*, was forwardest in this exploit, who to further his intent with one *Themides*, dissembling a friendly countenance, insinuated themselues into his familiaritie, vsing such kind behauiour towards him, and entertaining his company with such curtesie, that he hauing no insight into their dissimulation, beganne to make account of their friendship, and to take delight in their company, oftentimes imparting his secrets vnto them, and without suspition, making them priuie to most of his actions.

Argalus vpon a time came to *Parismenos*, telling him that a squire of his had found a mightie wild Boare, and could bring them to his den, desiring his company to goe with them to hunt him. *Parismenos* hearing that, was as forward as any of them, and the next morning appointed to meete them in the midst of the Forrest, at the Poles side. And early the next morning he got vp, according to his appointment, being ready to depart his chamber, some fiue or sixe droppes of bloud suddenly fell from his nose, with which he started, and staying, felt a suddaine drowsie heauinesse and throbbing, possesse his heart, which drane him into a deepe studie what should be the cause of that vnwonted passion: at last he began to think with himself, May not these fewe drops of bloud deuine some bad successe to my enterprise this day? I am here in a strange Country, amongst such as I know not how to trust, for I see apparantly many of them do enuy me, which they manifest by their lowring countenances, and *Corus* behauiour may be a patterne of their dispositions: therefore I were best not to go at all. Then again he began to thinke, *Argalus* and *Themides* are my friends, then what need I feare any mishap? All which doubts would not stay him, but arming himselfe, and resoluing to endure all mischaunces, he departed towards the Pole. By the way as he rode, he met a damsil posting towards him with great speed, wringing her hands, and making great lamentation. *Parismenos* marueiling at her sorrow, asked the cause of her complaint. Sir knight (quoth she) I was going to Duke *Aamicenus* court, carrying a present, and a letter from my mistresse, vnto a strange knight that lately arriued there: but by ẏ way, I met with two knights

in greene Armour, who disparpled me thereof, and most disloyally efferred to abuse me, had I not fled. Damsell (quoth he) bring me if you can where they are, and I will do my best to cause them make you restitution. Wherewith the Damsell turned her horse, and rode back againe. Sir Knight (quoth she) they take downe this narrow Lane. *Parismenos* set spurs to his horse, and with great speed rode that way. He was not farre entred, but he espied the two knights in greene Armor, readie mounted, staying in a pleasant valley, incompassed round with woods, unto whom he thus saide: Is it the maner of you Thracians, to offer violence to fille Damsels? Render me those things you haue taken frō her, or I protest I will not leane you, until I haue compeld you to doit by force. Unto whom one of them replied: If thy selfe art no Thracian, what doest thou here? or what interest hast thou in that Damsels quarrell, that maketh thee so bold to controwll our doinges? That interest I haue (quoth he) as all knights shou'd haue, which is to succor distressed Damsels: wherewith turning back to take scope for his race, he ran at one of them, and at the encounter, ouerthrew him backwards, who by mischance in the fall, burst one of his armes. The other seing his fellowes mischance, assailed *Parismenos* with his sword drawne: whome *Parismenos* so ouerlaid with fierce blowes, and wounded so grieuously, that hee fearing his death, and seing no other come to his rescue, was ready to yelde. Euen at that instant another Knight came, who seing one of them dead, and the other in great danger, ranne at *Parismenos*, with intent vnawares to pierce his speare through his body: But hee hearing the noise of his horse fete behinde him, nimbly spurd his horse forwards, by which meanes the knight lost his course, passing by without doing him any harme. *Parismenos* looking about him, and espying two enemies more, and missing the Damsell that had brought him thither, began to suspect some treachery: which thoughts, and the remembrance of the drops of blod þ fel frō him that morning added new courage to his valor, that reaching a furious blow at the wounded knight, the sword lighting on a broken place in the armor rusht into his body, and ended his life. By which time the two knights lately come, assailed him both at once, betweene whom began a most cruell and dangerous fight, that al the earth was coloured with þ blod that issued from their woundes: and notwithstanding *Parismenos* was before sore wounded, yet hee defended himselfe so courageously that his new come enemies could not indanger him, but with their owne disaduantage, who seing

his

his valour, and calling to mind *Corus* death, forsooke knightly chiualry and vsed al villainous & cowardly fight, the one sometimes behind him offring him a thrust, & when he turned to reuenge that inuirious deed, the other did the like, that hee perceiued they intended to murther him, which so inraged that gallãt knight, that dashing his spurs into his trustie steeds sides, he rusht with such violence against one of them, that he bare him quite out of his saddle, whose foote stil hung in his stirrop, and his horse dragd him with violence vp & down the field, vntil the stirrop burst, and he lay dead & dismounted. The other knight seeing his friends misfortune, would haue sled, but *Parismenos* strook such a violent blow vpon his head, that he lost his sences, but soone recouering himselfe againe, & thinking it better to dye by his enemies sword, then to yeeld to his mercy, turnes to *Parismenos*, vttring these speeches. Knight it thou art well giue ouer, otherwise know, that notwithstanding my former shew of fight, it is ẏ least part of my thought: but I intend to try it out with thee to the vttermost. Quoth he again, no dissembling Thracian, account not me so base minded to leaue such a villain to breath any longer, that art not worthy of knighthood, much lesse to be esteemed amongest men: was it thy pollicie by subtiltie to betray my life? If I be not deceiued, I knowe thee by thy voyce, and thy name is *Argalus*, my counterfaited friend. Am I the Bore thou intendest to slaie? No traytor Thracian, do not thinke mee so simple, but I perceiue thy trecherie, and well vnderstand thy drifts, nor do thou thinke to escape my hands. This Knight indeede was *Argalus*, who hearing his words was so ouercome with rage, that marking where his Armour was most broken, he gaue him such a violent thrust, that the purple blood followed his keene sword: which wounde was more deadly then all that he had before receiued, that bending all his forces to reuenge the same, hee smote so fiercely and nimbly at *Argalus*, that in the ende with many grieuous woundes, he beate him from his horse, and lighting, puld off his helmit and knew him: with that he said, *Argalus*, what offence haue I done thee, that thou shouldest seek my death? or wherein did I euer merit other then friendship at thy hands? most vnkind dissembler, thou shalt receiue a fit reward for thy vilany, wherwith, feeling the smart of the wound he had lately giuẽ him appresse his heart, he thrust his sword into his body, which ended his life, and sate downe weary with trauell, and so faint with effusion of blood, that his eyes began to dazle, and he fell downe vpon the earth, as one bereft of sence.

Amasenus

The second part

Amasenus all that day missing the knight of Fame, beganne to suspect that some other chaunge had caused him to depart so secretly, but hearing that *Argalus* and *Themides* were in his companie, whom he thought loued him dearly, his care was somewhat diminished, but whē it grew towards night, and none of them yet returned, he then began vehemently to feare the worst, that calling for his steede, he presently rode forth well accompanied, commaunding one to post this way, and another that way about the Forrest, to seeke the knight of Fame, himselfe rode which way his fancie best perswaded him vnto, and by chāce (directed by good fortune) he toke directly towards the place where the Combat was fought, and as he passed by the narrow Lane that went downe the valley, he espied one of the steedes all besteined with blood, wandring without the Rider, which stroke a sodaine feare to his hart, that ryding downe that Lane, he espied the dead bodies of mangled knights, lie confusedly scattered vpon the earth, with gastly countenances, being the fearfullest spectacle that euer eye beheld. The first that he beheld was *Themides*, almost torne to peces by his owne steede, with his foote stillin the stirrope. Next he vewed the other two knights so grieuously mangled and wounded, that the teares with griefe gusht from his eyes in abundance. Next he came to *Argalus*, whose face was vncouered, whom he soone knewe. And last of all, he came to *Parismenos*, who lay groueling with his face to the earth, still graspīg his bloody sword in his hand, whom he perceiued to gaspe for breath, that in all hast lifting vp his Beuer to giue him fresh aire, he knew him to be the knight of Fame, and perceiuing some life yet to remaine in him, he vnarmed him with his own hands and gently wrapt him vp close, that his woundes might not take aire, causing him to be carried to his Castle. The rest of the dead knights he likewise caused to bee carried backe, which was done with great lamentations, and afterwards by his ordinment were honourably buried.

CHAP. III.

How the Knights returned without any newes of Violetta. Of the sorrowe Polipus made for her absence, departing in her search. How Violetta hauing indured many miseries in Arebas Castle, at last escaped from thence in Soranas disguise.

THe Bohemian knights, by commandement of *Parismus*, and the Thessalian knights, for the affection they bare to *Violetta*, hauing

poſted through every part of *Bohemia*, and made all diligent ſearch, leaving no place vnſought, no means vnattempted, nor labour vnperformed to finde her: yet notwithſtanding all their faithfull diligence, at laſt returned without any newes of her at all: which renewed *Pollipus* ſorrowes afreſh, that but euen then had entertained a little quiet by *Pariſmus* perſwasions. But when he ſawe *Violetta* was by no meanes to be heard of, nor any likelihood or comfort left for him euer to ſee her againe: neither knowing nor any way ſuppoſing what ſhuld be become of her, his heart was ſo inwardly ouercome with troubleſome cogitations and doubtfull cares, that he could neither reſolue to ſeeke her, nor take any courſe to eaſe his minde: but reſtes like one vtterly giuen ouer, to ſorlorne and careleſſe miſerie, daylie frequenting thoſe ſolitary walkes where he left her, and hourely renewing his ſorrowes, by the ſad remembrance of her abſence, vttering ſuch mournfull plaints and ſad lamentations, that the birds that haunted thoſe vnfrequented places, ſeemed to mourn and lament with him. Sometimes accuſing himſelfe of negligence, to leaue her, to purſue the Beare, blaming her that would not ſtay his returne and then againe, fretting his heart for accuſing her. Sometimes thinking ſhe was dead, and then againe perſwading himſelfe ſhe was aliue, then muſing why ſhe did not returne to him if ſhe were aliue: that by contrarieties of doubts, he could adde no eaſe to his cares, nor reſt to his heart, at laſt he determined to ſearch throughout all *Germanie* and *Greece*, but he would find her: for he aſſuredly thought ſhe was not dead, being therto induced, for that he could not finde no likelihood therof, being perſwaded by *Pariſmus*, that ſome diſcurteous knight had met with her, and ſo withheld her returne: that within fewe dayes (arming himſelfe in a greene armour, which he made of purpoſe, bearing this deuice: *A knight purſuing a wilde Beare*) he left the Bohemian Court, making none priuie to his departure but *Pariſmus*, (who determined not to ſtay long behinde him) whom we will leaue onwards of his iourney, and ſpeake of *Violetta*, whom we left weake in *Archas* Caſtle.

All one as the two gentlewomen had conueyed her to her bed, with the comfortable meanes they vſed, ſhe began to be ſomewhat reuiued, and calling her ſences to their wonted vſes, began to make ſuch dolefull lamentations, that no hart was able to indure to heare them, without effuſion of teares: oftentimes offering to do her ſelfe violence, but

that she was hindred by the two gentlewomen: especially one of them named *Seraia*, was so carefull over her, that she left not so much as a pinne about her, wherewith she might do her selfe harme: but when some three dayes were past, and the extremitie of her desperate passion somewhat calmed, she began to desire that *Archas* would convey her to the Bohemian Court: if not to finde *Pollipus* yet to enioy the comfortable presence of *Parismus* and *Laurana*: but notwithstanding her manifold intreaties, they vsed some excuses or other, to frustrate her expectation, telling her that it was dangerous for her to trauell yet, by reason of her late sicknesse, and that since it was certaine *Pollipus* was no more to be enioyed, she might stay with them some few daies, vntill she were better able to endure so long a iourney: for that the Bohemian Court was not so neare as she thought. Which excuses, rather increased her desire, and the more she seemed desirous to goe thither, the more they defrauded her by excuses many dayes. In which time, she being endued with an extraordinary wisedome, having well weighed each circumstance of her bringing thither, and their friuolous excuses to detaine her there: and withall, noting their behauiours and speeches, began to suspect *Archas* dissimulation: to finde out the truth thereof, she beganne (contrary to her inward thoughts) to frame a chearfuller countenance, and comfortabler disposition, thereby to faile their intents, which wrought such effect, that within a while *Archas* would often frequent her company, and in the end profered loue to her, vsing her most kindly, carefully and tenderly, seeming aboue all things to regard her quiet and content, whose speeches she endured quietly, and tooke in good part (as he thought) that vpon a time, amongst many speeches, taking her by the hand, he said.

Most beautifull Lady, I haue euer since the first viewe of those excellent beauties, beene tormented with the passions of entire loue, that I could take no quiet, but in the sweete remembrance of your perfections, which haue bounde my deuotions to your seruice, in such firme and constant leagues, that my resolution is, to spend my life (if it were a thousand times dearer to me then it is) onely to procure your content: therefore thus boldly I presume to reueale my affections, trusting your clemencie will adde some ease to my carefull heart, by shewing some courteous signe of your fauourable acceptance of my humble suite: and though my merit hath no way deserued such fauour, yet I beseech you, make tryall of my loyaltie,

and

and you shall finde I will be inferior to none in good will, nor violate myprofessed loyaltie in any vndutifull respect. I haue the boldest presumed to detaine you here, because with your absence my life would depart: then conjecture not a iuste of that true loue and sincere affection which hath caused me to offend in, but no offence at all, if you vouchsafe not to take it so: here shall you inioy you fill of content, in as ample sort as any other place can yelde: then I beseech you graunt some ease to my troubled heart, and by your clemencie release me of those cares that possesse my brest, onely procured by the piercing dart of your sacred beautie. Which wordes being ended, hee offered to haue kild her, but shee gentlie resisting the same, made this replie.

Sir knight, my sorrows will not suffer me to beleeue your speeches, nor my late losse, permit me to entertaine your loue: for then might you esteeme me light, and so lightly wonne, as little regard me: but to put you out of suspence, my resolution is, neuer to loue any but my deare *Pollipus*: wherewith the Christall teares with a violent passage, fell from her griefe swollen eye-balls.

That griefe quoth he, is remediesse: therefore banish the sad remembrance thereof from your heart, and entertaine a perswasion of my constancie, and true affection, which shal euerlastingly remaine inviolable, without intermission.

How can I (quoth she) in conscience, and without euerlasting staine to my honour, when I haue neither performed his funerall, nor shewed any token of dutie to his dead corpes, who loued me most dearely in his life time. But shew me this fauour, as to let me but returne to the Court to bewaile his death, and a while enioy my deare friendes company, and I promise and protest next *Pollipus*, to loue none but your selfe.

Archas hearing her reasonable demaund, stoode like one amazed, not knowing what aunswere to make her, thinking that if hee shoulde denie her that request being so small, shee might thinke his loue but slender: and if hee should promise her, and not performe it, that might bee a meanes to breede a suspition in her, that his reports to her were false: that he stoode musing a great while confounded in his thoughts, what to deuise for a readie aunswere.

May ſtudie not ſo for that (quoth *Violetta*) but anſwere me another time. Which ſaid, ſhe withdrew her ſelfe vnto her chamber, where ſhe began to meditate of his ſpeeches, and how he was aſtoniſht, when ſhe requeſted him to conney her to the court, which drane her into many cogitations, when preſently one of the gentlewomen came to her, whom ſhe vſed moſt kindly, and of purpoſe to teſte her minde, grew into familiare ōference with her. & amongſt many other ſpeeches (quoth ſhe) I pray tell me what *Archas* hath reported vnto you, concerning *Pollipus*, for he ſeemeth vnwilling to vtter his mind vnto me. He told me nothing quoth ſhe. Which words came from her with ſuch ſtuttering, and change of countenance, that *Violetta* began to ſuſpect, that *Archas* had all that while diſſembled with her and that *Pollipus* (contrary to his report) was yet liuing. And whē *Serana* came ſhe likewiſe felt her minde, of whom ſhe gathered ſome probabilitie: and likewiſe, when ſhe next came into *Archas* company, ſhe aſked him ſo many queſtions, that ſhe found many contrarieties in his ſpeeches, which kiſſed ſuch a perſwaſiue opinion in her minde, that *Archas* report of *Pollipus* was vntrue, that ſhe reſted greatly comforted that way, but yet in great care, cogitating what he wold ſuppoſe was becomē of her, how ſhe ſhuld get out of that place, or giue him knowledge of her being there, and auoyde *Archas* odious loue, which ſeemed as deadly to her heart as infectious venome.

Archas ſtill proſecuted his ſute with great earneſtneſſe, making many friuolous excuſes to withhold her from the Bohemian court, growing into ſuch boldneſſe, that oftentimes when ſhe refuſed his offered embracings and impudent behauiours, he would by force kiſſe her, and fold her in his armes, which rudeneſſe, he ſo often vſed, that ſhe began ſo extreamely to abhorre him, that his ſight was moſt odious vnto her.

Oftentimes *Violetta* did walke into a pleaſant Orchard adioyning to the Caſtle, as well to recreate her dulled ſences in thoſe pleaſant ſhades, as in ſolitarineſſe to recount her miſeries, and eaſe her careſull heart by inuenting meanes how to ridde her ſelfe from forth that labyrinth of ſorrow, and alſo to auoyd *Archas* odious ſight, who inwardly luſted to ſatiſfie his inordinate appetite, by obtaining the fruition of her dilicate body: and though he knew *Pollipus* were liuing, and heard the mones and ſorrowfull complaints *Violetta* made, able to extenuate any tyrannous diſpoſitiō, yet he perſiſted in his diuelliſh reſolution, with ſuch impudency, that neither regarding her complaints, nor the lawes

of

of nature, he still sought all disloyal opportunities to dishonour her. And on a time, marking wh̄ she went into the Orchard, as she was wont, in middest of her silent cogitations, he came to the place where she sate, (whose hart began to pant with a kind of feare, when she beheld him) and comming vnto her, seating himselfe close by her swēt side, he vttered these speeches.

You know deare Lady, how long I haue sued to obtaine your loue, being thereto compelled by the extremities of loues euerlasting flame, which boileth in my troubled brest, but hitherto you haue obdurated your heart against me, and not vouchsafed to yeelde any pitty to my distresse, but contrary to the kinde nature that should abound in you, seeme not at all to regard my passions, which hath added sorrow to my torment. Now swēte Lady, seeing with what devotions I haue attended your pleasure, defer me no longer, but let me obtaine that favour, which with such care I haue expected, and you so vnkindly withheld: which wold both ease my comfortlesse heart and adde no small content to the remediless sorrowes you so impatiently endure.

Violetta hearing his speeches, made this replie. Sir, I haue long since told you my resolution, which might be a sufficient answer to any reasonable creature: besides, my vowes passed to my deare knight *Polipus*, haue bound me from yeelding my spotlesse honour to bee stained with the blot of infamie. Then I pray leave off to prosecute your suite, which you ground vpon loues foundation, being indeede, nothing but the insatiate desire of filthy concupiscence, the remembrance whereof, addeth new care to my carefull heart, and euery way affrighteth me with discontent: and if you so much regard my content, as you protest, desist to trouble me with your loue, and giue me leave to depart from hence, that I may spend the rest of my dayes in sorrowe, for his losse, that was more deare vnto me, then all the worlds treasure.

I but Lady quoth *Arehas*, calme this discontent with remembrance of an impossibilitie in obtaining ought at his hands, and gee not about to cōsume these heauenly perfections with sorrow, & seeme not more angrie then reason requireth, to him that loueth you as well as *Polipus* euer did: and now that occasion hath so fitly offered the swēt opportunitie of time and place, let vs spend this time in loue, and not in these contentions: these vnfrequented pathes adde meanes to further our loues: here are no eyes to behold vs, nor any to bewray our secrets, but the silent trees & swēt smelling flowers: & that which is vnknown, is in a

maner vncommitted: and in requital of your kindnesse, I will performe whatsoeuer you shall commaund me, were it to run through thousands of deathes, to procure your content: thē swēt loue be not so vnkind, but yeeld some pittie to my restlesse cares, and detaine not from mee that pleasant delight, which will extinguish my bitter griefes. When he had ended his speeches, he strictly caught her tender body in his arms, imprinting a compelled kisse vpō her tender lips, twining her curled locks about his grosse fingers, and boldly fingring her tender breasts, offering other forced behauiour: whilest she striued to vntwine her body off his armes, which when shee had obtained, casting a disdainfull countenance vpon him (like as *Diana* cast vpon the wofull *Acteon*) with her cheekes as red as scarlet, she vttered these speeches.

Most discourteous villaine, hath my lenitie inforced thee to offer me this abuse: or is thy minde so far from pietie, as not to desist from prosecuting thy detested lust? knowe this, that rather then I will yeelde my honour to bee blemished by thy appetite, I will teare these eyes from forth my head, and ende my woful life, which thou soughtest to spill. Is this the friendship thou hast protested? was it thy pollicie to traine mee hither to dishonour mee? hadst thou left me in the place where I lost my beloued, then had I beene happie, if some wilde beast had ended my life. I now perceiue thy protestations are but filthy actors of thy intended villanie, and all which thou hast told me of *Pollipus* death, to be most false and vntrue: for no doubt, hee is yet liuing, whom thou seekest to dishonour, by dispoyling me of that which I reserued for him. Accursed wretch that I was, to fal into thy odious hāds, which art void of knightly behauiour.

Archas hearing himself thus reuiled, abandoned shame and pitty, violently pulling her to him: tolde her, that she should submit her selfe to his will, offering by force to attaine the fruition of her spotlesse body. When *Violetta* felt her selfe so handled, she laboured by all meanes to disapoint him of his will: but in the ende, feeling her selfe too weake, long to withhold his force, she yeelded forth such shrikes, as all the Castle rong with the noyse of her entric: that *Serana* hearing the same, knowing the place where she vsed, came thitherwards. *Archas* beholding her withdrew himselfe, and *Violetta* rose from the place, tyred with resistance, and swolne with inward vexation and disdain, to be so vsed, casting her countenance downe to the earth: to whom *Serana* said: How now Lady, what causeth your sorrow? hath *Archas* offered you violence?

violence? *Violetta* with teares trickling downe her crimzen cheekes, answered: yea, that villaine *Archas* would haue done me violence, had not you so fortunately come to my rescue: but I thinke the diuine prouidence, that hath sent you so happily to preserue me free from his deuouring lust, whose dishonourable minde is fraught with all villanies: accursed be the day that first brought me to this hatefull place, to fall into his loathsome power that contrary to nature hath done me this outrage. Sweet *Sorana* (quoth she) conuey me secretly into the Castle, that there I may in sorrow ende my accursed life: rather then again abide his loathsome sight, which will be as pestilent as deadly poyson to my heart. *Sorana* taking her by the arme to support her weake bodie, led her to her Chamber. *Archas* likewise seing himselfe so frustrated of his desire, with an impudent and vnshamefast countenance, went into the Castle, vowing in his heart neuer to desist vntil he had accomplished his desire.

Violetta being come to her chamber, related to *Sorana* the whole manner of *Archas* vsage, intreating her counsaile which way to auoyde his suites, which she knew he wold still prosecute: who vttered her mind in this sort. Lady, I pittie your estate, but am so far from adding release thereto, as I know no meanes at all how to remoue you: for *Archas* disposition I too well knowe, is farre from any sparke of honestie, who hath in like sort behaued himselfe to me at my first comming hither, which was in the prime of my youth: neither giue any credit to his reports: for he hath tolde me that *Pollipus* is yet liuing, and long since I suspected he would vse you in this sort, and escape from hence you cannot: for this castle is continually guarded, hauing but one entrance thereto, whereby none can escape vndescried: therefore I think it best for you to yeeld to his loue, and then you may liue in quiet: otherwise, I know your life will be miserable enough.

Violetta was striken into a suddaine amazement to heare her detested counsaile thinking to haue found some comfort in her speeches: insomuch, that with extremitie of passion, she was ready to giue vp the ghost. Which *Sorana* beholding, reuiuing her with rubbing her pale cheekes, she said, as followeth.

If you will follow my aduise and counsaile, I may peraduenture ease you in some respect, which is this: That the next time when *Archas* againe sollicites his suite, condiscend to his request, conditionally, that he will come to you in the silent of the night, so secretly

that

that none may know thereof, and that onely hee satisfie himselfe with your loue without asking questions, or entring into any talke, which may renew the remembrance of your former greefe: and when with these conditions you haue agreed, my selfe will supply your roome, and thereby safegard your honour, and satisfie him: which may wel be performed, considering that his desire being nothing but lust, he easily will bee drawne to condiscend to your conditions: which once done, let me alone to execute the rest: for I am so wel acquainted with his fashions, that it shal be long before he discerie our deceit.

Violetta hearing the circumstance of her talke, promised to doe all things according to her counsel, if she her selfe meant faithfully. Which *Serana* assured her of, by many protestations, and so left her in some comfort, hoping by this meanes, to bee ridde from her impudent louer.

Assoone as *Serana* was departed, she presently goeth to *Archas*, (pricked forward with as great a sting of foule lust as raigned in him) and told him, that she had talked with *Violetta* about his suite, which shee was perswaded shee would yeelde vnto, but that shee was bashful: and by his speeches, rather hardned, then any way mollified: but (quoth she) trie her euen now, and whatsoeuer shee bindeth you vnto by condition, that promise you to performe: and when you know her minde, tell mee what shee saies, and I may peraduenture counsaile you what to doe for your furtherance: for shee is worthy to be beloued and kindely vsed, and in my iudgement, you did amisse to vse her so rudely as you did in the Orchard: for forced kindenesse is not worth estimation, but consent in loue breedes the swetest delight. *Archas* presently put her counsaile in practise, and came to *Violettaes* chamber (who was then studying how to rid her selfe from his custody) and very kindely saluted her, crauing pardon for his last offence, excusing himselfe by many reasons, and alleaging as many perswasions, that she could not in reason deny his request, his loue being grounded vpon the truest foundation of perfect constancy, of vowes, oathes, and protestations, to dedicate himselfe, his life, and all that he had to be at her command. *Violetta* (casting downe her eyes to the earth, and with a blushing countenance, to thinke how much it went against her hart, to vse him kindly: asking pardon of *Pollipus*, in her secret thoughts, for doing him that vnwilling wrong) at last made answere, that shee could in some sort bee contented to graunt his request, if hee would promise to performe what

what she should inioine him to, which he vowed and protested to fulfil in euery respect. Then she concluded with him as *Sorana* had counselled her to do, which liked him exceedingly well, & quoth she, for a pledge hereof, giue me that ring which you so much esteem, which he gaue vnto her, and at his departure receiued from her a gentle kisse, which shee wish'd might proue as deadly poyson to his heart, being greatly discontented with her selfe for shewing him that fauour.

Archas presently with a ioyfull heart went to *Sorana*, and tolde her all that had passed betwixt him and *Violetta*: which she willed him in any wise to performe: and seeing she hath bound you from talke, what needs you care for speaking, sith you may enioy what otherwise you desire: and she finding you so willing to condiscend to her requeste, will bee the easilier drawne to yelde you any courtesie. *Sorana* being parted from him, immediately came to *Violetta*, and tolde her all that he had made her priuie vnto, and withall said, that for her sake onely she vndertooke that taske, (which was nothing so, but of a most inordinate desire to beastly lust, which *Violetta* well noted:) and thus they spent the day in much pole talke, vntill euening drawing nigh, shee left *Violetta* in her chamber, and went vnto that sweete bedde, which she had neatly dreſt for *Archas*, perfuming her selfe with many odoriferous waters, deuising al meanes she could to keep her selfe vnknown from him, being affected with great desire for his approach. Assone as the appoynted time was come, *Archas* secretly conueyed himselfe in the darke, into *Violettas* chamber, without speaking a word, whom when *Sorana* heard rusling vppon the rushes, her heart leapt for ioy: and she prepared her selfe to entertaine him in the kindest sort, who approaching the beds side, softly lifting vp the cloathes, laide himselfe downe by her side, who seemed to shrinke thereat, and with such cunning behaued her selfe, that he no whit suppoſed he embraced his wonted *Sorana*.

Violetta being sure of *Archas*, with all haste attired her selfe in *Soranas* apparrell, which so well became her, that had *Archas* himselfe seene her, he would not haue discerned her disguise, & taking with her the ring he had giuen her, she came to the Gardians, telling the she must goe out about a little businesse for *Archas*, and gaue them the ring as her warrant to passe by. The Gardians marueled whither she went so late, yet taking her for no other then *Sorana*, accepting her warrant, let her depart. *Violetta* being past the entrance, beganne to

staide which way to take, but knowing that the time now yelded no respite to delaye, take any way came into her fancie, still as she thought for her escape: and with all hast arming her selfe with as much courage as could possibly be in a woman, scaling the mountaines, which she thought dangerous for wilde beastes, she travelled all that night sometimes running, and sometimes going, as if *Archas* had bin hard at hand pursuing her, and by that time *Phœbus* began to illuminate the earth with his brightnesse, she was gotten a great way from *Archas* Castle, towards *Greece* reioycing at her happy escape not caring which way she went, so she might get from him: and applauding *Soranus* counsell, which had sorted to that unexpected issue for her escape.

CHAP. VI.

How Pollipus was taken prisoner by the Gyant Brandamor, in the Forrest of Arde. And of Parismus departure with Tellamor and Barzillus, in search of Violetta.

After that *Pollipus* was departed from *Parismus*, he came to the place where he left *Violetta*, and there uttered these speeches. This is that blessed place where my Loue lay last faulded in mine armes, whose presence was the sollace of my inward content whose perfections exceld the rarest guifts of other Ladies, as farre as good doth bad, or any vertue his contrarie: which way should I take to recouer that inestimable iewell of my delight here left? or whither should I travell to finde her, considering I know not whether she be dead or alive?

Dead I am perswaded she is not, but by some discourteous knight withheld from returning, or conueyed far hence vnto some vnknowne place, frō whence she cannot send me word, or any way giue me knowledge in what estate she remaineth then what resteth for me to do, but to search the world throughout to finde her, and either to recouer her to my comfort, or spend my life in that pursuite: and since I vndertake a trauell, without knowledge which way to take, or whither to conuey my steppes, sweet fortune be so fauourable, as to guide me in my trauels,

uels, that by thy aide I may come to the place of her abode, and attaine the fruition of her heauenly presence, who by thy appointment hath fallen into these mischances: and I will for euer dedicate my indeuours to thy seruice, and continually adore thy name. Which words being ended, hee mounted himselfe on his Steede, and rode the way his fancie first chose, trauailing towards the mountaines that lay neere vnto *Bohemia*, but not finding her, being vnacquainted in those countries, wandred towards *Grecia*, & trauailed without any more hope to finde her, then at the beginning, continuing his trauels without intermission, passing in my places without any misaduenture. At last he came to the great Forrest of *Ardea*, wherein stoode the Castle of the mighty Gyant *Brandamor*, the place being inuincible, by reason of the situation and strength, whose cruelties committed by him and his brother *Argalentus*, made him much feared, and his walkes eschued of all men.

Which Forrest *Pollipus* was no sooner entred, but hee espied the body of a goodly Knight, that had lately giuen vp his ghost lye welteed in his blood, which when he had well viewed, and perceiued to be quite past recouerie, he maruailed what sad aduenture had beene cause of his death, perswading himselfe, those that had done the same were not far off: that he withdrew himselfe into a thicket of bushes, where he could not be discerned, to lay vntil he might discerne those that had done that deed.

Hee had not bin long shrowded there, but he sawe a damzell and a squire, comming to the dead knight, with great lamentations, bewailing his vntimely death, seeming by their behauiour to be quite ouercome with extreame miserie.

After their lamentations ended, they hasted to take vp the dead knight, to whom *Pollipus* came and demaunded what knight that was, and what misaduenture had brought him to that vntimely death. The damzel casting her eyes vp to him, which before were fixed on the earth, said. Sir knight, to discouer the whole circumstance of our mishap, would aske more respite then the time will now permit: because if we be surprised by our fortune, we are like to be partners with him in death. This knight was named *Tyrides*, borne to the noble Duke *Amasenus* of *Thrace*, being brought vp in the Court of the renowmed King of *Libia*, who being both the Princelie *Venola*,

the kings onely daughter on hunting, in the mid[illegible] of their paſtime, ſhe was ſeuered from the reſt of her company, and being wet with following the game, alighted in a pleaſaunt valley to coole her ſelfe, and lay downe on the flowring bankes of a ſweete burbling brooke, where ſhee had not long ſtayed, but ſhee was ſurpriſed by a Gyant, who with rude behauiour brought her away: wherewith I being amazed, ranne backe to this worthie knight *Tyrides*, who with mee and this Page, purſued him vntill wee came to this place, where this noble knight charged him to redeliuer the Ladie to him, who late panting with extreame feare of her life, vnder this guard: but the Gyant preſently ſet vpon this knight, and in long continuance of terrible fight, ſlewe him, by which time many of her damzels had found vs out, whom her with *Venola*, notwithſtanding their earneſt intreaties, conueyed to a Caſtle not farre hence, whither we ſecretly followed him, and are now returned to carry backe this knight, with this heauie newes, to the King.

Do not ſo quoth *Pollipus*, but bring me to the Caſtle, and thou ſhalt ſoone ſee I will ſet her at libertie, or venter my life. Sir (quoth the damzell) if I thought your trauel would ſort to any good iſſue, I would conduct you thither, but the Gyant is now within the Caſtle, & the night neare approached, therefore we will depart with this dead knight, and if you pleaſe to goe thither, you may eaſily finde it.

Pollipus ſeeing her ſo vnwilling, left her, and rode towardes the Caſtle, which he found faſt ſhut, whereto was one paſſing by a bridge, ouer a mightie huge deepe lake, the Caſtle it ſelfe being ſeituated vpon a loftie rocke, ſo well fenced by nature, and ſtrengthened by the art of man, that it was vnconquerable, and not to be ſubdued by force: and comming to the bridge he found the ſame drawn vp, by meanes whereof, he thought it vaine to account of any thing that night, but contented himſelfe to take the cold earth for his bed, and the large Foreſt for his Chamber, where hee could take no reſt, being troubled with many thoughts, hauing likewiſe ſome hope to finde *Violetta* in that place, which added (though it were verie vnlikelie) great courage to his reſolution. That viewing the inuincible ſtrength of the Caſtle, and well conſidering how he might diſaduantage the Gyant if he could get him to ſingle fight, in theſe and ſuch like thoughts hee ſpent moſt part of the night, vntil at laſt he laid him downe, and gaue a little ſlumber to his eyes.

Early in the morning he buckled on his armour, and mounting his ſteede,

stands, shrowded himselfe vnder the shadow of an oake, not farre from the Castle, where he might easily see who went out and in thereat.

The first that came out that morning, was *Argalte*, mounted vpon a goodly Courser, and armed in very rich Armour, whom *Pollipus* thought had beene the Gyant that the Damzel had tolde him of, whom he thus greeted. Traitor, art thou the Gyant of this Castle, which hast stolne the Ladie *Venola*? *Argalt* hearing his peremptorie demaund, made this answere. I haue the Ladie *Venola* in my custodie, whom I esteeme aboue all the world, but no traitor as thou termest mee. Yes, (quoth *Pollipus*) thou art a traitor, and worse then a villaine, that disloyally offerest outrage to resistlesse Ladies, that hast not so much valour, as to shewe thy selfe before an armed Knight: but since my destinies haue allotted me to meete thee thus conueniently, I will abate thy pride, and correct thy tyrannie, and make thee repent the outrages thou hast committed.

Argalt hearing his speeches, was so inraged, that suddainly hee drew forth his mightie Fawchion, and as suddainly stroke a violent blowe therewith at *Pollipus*, which by the vnexpected approach, being vnresisted, glaunced on his thigh, and pierced the Armour, that the blood appeared.

Pollipus seeing how treacherously hee had smitten him, drewe his sword and reuenged that blowe, beginning a braue and faire combat, which continued for a good space, vntill they had giuen each other many deepe woundes. *Argalte* marueiling at his enemies valour, being neuer before so roughly handled, laid on his blowes with mightie force, but *Pollipus* sometime nimbly auoyding one, and cunningly warding another, kept himselfe from any great harme, and in the end tired *Argalt*, who seeing that all his strength little auailed to his enemies disaduantage, and withall, feeling himselfe almost wearied, beganne to abate his blowes, which *Pollipus* perceiuing, gaue him so many blowes, and withall, such deepe wounds, that he was in great danger of his life: and turning his backe, fled towards the Castle, whom *Pollipus* pursuing, gaue so many wounds, that he beganne to roze and crie exceedingly, yelling forth such a hideous noyse, that all the Castle rung therewith.

Brandamor hearing the same, presently hasted to his reskue, and lifting vp his mightie mace, vnawares stroke so forcibly therewith vp-

on *Pollipus* Creſt, that it made him ſtagger, withall ſaying: Why offereſt thou this outrage to my brother? *Pollipus* ſeing his mightie proportion, being ſomewhat dazled with the blowe, retired a little backe, and being recouered, made this anſwere. I nede not tell thee wherefore, for that thy guiltie conſcience replete with vice, can beare witneſſe of thy degenerate crueltie offered to all that come within thy power, but eſpecially to the faire Ladie *Venola*, whom thou (or thy brother) haſt brought to this Caſtle, whom I am come to reſcue.

Brandamor hearing his ſpeeches, moſt cowardly aſſailed him, being before almoſt wearied, and greeuously wounded: who not withſtanding reſiſted him ſo valiantly, that *Brandamor* in ſhort time had receiued many greeuous wounds, yet ſtaying himſelfe, ſaid. I pitie thy eſtate, and therefore I wiſh thee to yelde thy ſelfe, before I chaſtiſe thy boldneſſe any further, for I ſee thou art alreadie wounded, and vnable to withſtand my ſtrength: beſides, I ſcorne to cope with one alreadie vanquiſhed: then take my offer of mercie, or elſe I will ſone giue that weake bodie of thine to be deuoured of wilde beaſtes. Vnto which boaſting monſter quoth *Pollipus*, know, that I diſdaine thy friendſhip, and diſclaime thy proffer, deſiring rather to die by thy curſed hand, then yelde to thy courteſie, therefore do thy worſt.

Brandamor hearing this reſolute reply, being inraged with choler, ſtroke at him moſt vielently, but *Pollipus* auoyding his blowe thruſt at him, and wounded him ſo deepe, that the blood ranne downe vpon his white ſheete. *Argalt* ſeeing this knight ſo valiantly withſtand his brother, called forth a great troop of ſeruants in Armour, who ruſhing all at once vppon him, with their throng beate him from his horſe and carried him into the Caſtle, where hee was vnarmed, and for that night put into a cloſe priſon, hauing an olde woman to dreſſe his wounds.

Early the next morning, hee was brought into the Hall before *Brandamor*, who had Magnifically ſeated himſelfe in a chaire, with ſterne and ſtout eyes ſwolne with rage, vttering theſe ſpeeches. Vnhumaine and cowardly Knight, what frenzie hath cauſed thee to commit ſuch vnnaturall folly, whereby thou haſt incurred my deadly wrath againſt thee, and brought ſorrie extremitie and damage? Wherein haue I wronged thee, that thou ſhouldſt ſeeke to moleſt me?

Pollipus diſdaining to be ſo peremptorily examined, made this reply.

ply. I list not tell my name, because thou knowest me not, the cause of my comming hither, is in search of a Lady that I suppose thou vniustly detainest, making thy infamous name so ignominious by thy outrages, that both heauen and earth will shortly hate thee. Doest thou seeke a Ladie (quoth he) come with me, and thou shalt see all the Ladies I haue.

Then hee brought him into a goodly Hall, hung with auncient clothes of Tapistrie, out of which he went into a most pleasant Gallerie furnished with al sorts of most beautiful pictures of excellent workmanship: from hence he came into a chamber of great largenesse, so rarely furnished, as *Pollipus* marvelled at the richnesse thereof: at the end whereof, sate the most beautifull and faire Ladie *Venola*, with her golden hayre hanging about her shoulders, her rich and costly ornaments all betorne, her crimzen cheekes sprinckled with olde dryed teares, and fresh droppes flowing from her pure eyes: heauily leaning her carefull head vpon a cushion, with her hands hanging downe folded one in another, seemed so sadde and heauie a spectacle of a distressed Ladie, as neuer eye beheld: who seeing *Brandamor* and *Pollipus* comming toward her, lifted vp her head from the place where she rested it, and carelessly let the same fall on the heauie pillows againe. *Pollipus* seeing her exceeding beautie, and withal, noting her heauie estate, was strooken into a suddaine dumpe, that he stood like one in a studie. *Brandamor* thinking that was the Ladie he came to redeeme, saide. Knight, if this be the Ladie thou seekest to release, thy labour is in vaine: for her do I esteeme more then all the world: whose presence I so highly honour, that no force shall redeeme her from hence: whom I both loue and honour, as much as thou and all the Knights in the world besides: whose loue hath caused my languishing torments this long time, which now I purpose to enioy, to the extinguishing of my inward vexations: for her sake haue I induced much trauel, then do not thinke that I will easily or willingly leaue her heauenly companie, but will approue and maintaine, that I am worthier of her loue then any Knight liuing: and since I haue my desire in attaining her custodie, I will likewise enioy her loue before she part hence.

Venola hearing his proude boasting, so much disdained them that she could not refraine from answering him, but rising from the ground where she sate, she vttered these speeches.

Impudent

Impudent miſcreant, why preſumeſt thou ſo much of thy ſelfe, that art able to performe nothing but bragges? thinkeſt thou my loue of ſo ſmall eſtimation, as to be controlde and conquered by thy vaine ſpeaches? or any way to yeild liking to thy deteſted karcaſſe: No, I account the baſeſt trull in *Libia*, too good to bee thy Paramour, much leſſe my ſelfe do ſo much ſcorne thee, that I will rather execute mine owne death, then ſuffer thee to defile me ſo much as with a touch: and thinkeſt thou becauſe thou haſt betraied this one knight by treacherie, there are no other that will ſeeke my releaſe? Yes be thou aſſured, that the violence thou haſte offered mee, by bringing me hither againſt my will, one day will turne to be the occaſion of thy cruell death. Thou foule deteſted villaine, leaue off to vtter ſuch boſting ſpeeches in my preſence, for nothing can bring more greefe to my heart, then thy ill pleaſing ſight.

Brandamer hearing her heauenly voyce ſound forth ſuch bitter taunts againſt him, was exceedingly inraged therewith, but diſſembling a pleaſant countenance, hee departed with *Pollipus*, whom after ſome ſpeeches paſt betwixt them, hee commaunded to bee conueyed to a chamber, from whence he could as hardly get, as from the ſtrongeſt priſon in the world: who ſeeing that *Violetta* was not in the Caſtle, wiſht he had not attempted to haue come there, but making a vertue of neceſſity, he indured ſuch impriſonment as patiently as might be, thinking all miſery nothing, being vndergone for *Violetas* ſake. Where we will leaue him, to ſpeake of *Pariſmus*.

Pariſmus heart was oppreſt with ſuch griefe, for the loſſe of the vertuous *Violetta*, and the abſence of his deare friend *Pollipus*, that day nor night hee could neither by ſleepe, or other recreation, giue any eaſe to his troubled head: therefore he determined likewiſe, to indure ſome trauell for their ſakes, that had ſuffered much miſerie in his behalfe: and when *Laurana* and he were one night ſweetly ſolacing themſelues, each in the others pleaſant loue, he tolde her his full intent deſiring her not to be diſcontented therewith, but to take his departure patiently.

Laurana hearing his ſpeeches, was ſo ouercome with griefe, that a flood of teares diſtilled from her precious eyes, and twining her tender armes about his necke, impreſſing a ſweete kiſſe vpon his lips, thee vttered theſe ſpeeches. Moſt noble Lord, are you wearie of my company, that you ſeeke to eſtraunge your ſelfe from mee by

trauell?

frauell? do you thinke I shall be able long to endure your absence, well knowing how many dangers may hazard your person, and detain your heauenly presence from my sight? thinke you that I can attaine any quiet, without the fruition of your heauenly company? or euer suffer sleepe to seize vpon my eyes while you are absent? No sweet Lord, with your departure, all ioy and delight shall part from me, and neuer will I suffer any content to harbour in my brest. Then most deare Loue, (which words she vttered, intermingled with a number of sweete kisses) do not leaue me in care, do not withhold my content, do not take away my sweetest delight, but staie you stil with me, and commaund your knights to go in *Violettas* search, who at the least becke, wil poste through the worlde to do you seruice: and hazard not your person in strange Countries, nor amongst forraine enemies, which may by some trecherie worke your griefe: my selfe wil here shrowde you from harme: my armes shall inclose you from danger, and my loue shall be the Fort you shall conquer. I wil expel the sad remembrance of their losse, with delightfull communication: my selfe wil rocke your sences a sleep with Musicke, and my indeuours shall labor to purchase your content: then do not seeke to leaue me comfortlesse to bewaile your absence, but make abode with me stil, and my loue shall shelter you from all peril. Which words being ended, the ouerflowing of her teares, stopt the passage of her speech, and sopping forth sighes, she hung about his necke.

Parismenos was exceedingly greeue to see her heauinesse, that fowlding her precious bodie in his armes, with a strict imbracing, he laboured by delightful familiarities, to expel her sadnesse: which being some what mittigated, he vttered these speeches.

Why deare Ladie, what need you make these complaints, consideringyou know nothing is so pretious in my sight, nor of so deere estimation with me, as your sweete loue? Or what neede you make speech, or take such feare of dangers, when you see no cause of disquiet? Why are you vnwilling that I should take a litle paines for their sakes, that wold haue many wayes indangered their liues, and endured extreame miserie for your sake? How can I excuse my selfe of ingratitude, to that curteous knight *Pollipus*? if whilest he passeth his time in sorrowfull care, I should liue here in ease not seeming to regard his misery, that would haue shunned no danger to procure my comfort? How wil all the knights of this Court esteeme of me, but as of an ingrateful person, if I should so much neglect the dutie of a friend? Then sweete Loue, be

not you the cause of my stay, but let me obtaine your sweet consent, and repell those confused cares that trouble your quiet: for be you assured, nothing can be more greenous vnto me, then your discontent: and nothing more pleasing, then your accord: the dangers accurrant to trauel, are by wisedome easily auoyded: then be you assured, that I will shun al hazard of mishap, for your sweete sake, and leaue you off to sorrow thus for that which you cannot with equitie contradict: my stay shall not bee long, nor my iourney far: then be you contented to vouchsafe your agreement, and you shall thereby satisfie my content: his speeches being ended, with silence she gaue consent, spending some time in sweet dalliance, and in the end, fell fast a sleepe.

Early in the morning, *Parismus* with many sweet kisses, tooke his leaue of *Laurana*, who bedewed her bed with abundance of teares, for his departure, and falling into a deepe passion of feare, she presently started vp, and arraying her selfe, came downe into the court, where *Parismus* was readie to take his horse & running to him, caught hold of him, who marueiling thereat, tooke her most louingly in his armes, who was so far ouergon with griefe, that she could not speake a word: but bestowing many sweete tear-wet kisses on her, he left her amongst her maids, and departed. With him, were *Tollamor* and *Barzillus*, keeping company togither some three dayes, without aduenture at all: at last, they came to a goodly plaine, wherinto a common beaten path conducted them, vntill comming to the middest thereof, there stood a brazen pillar, from which, parted three seuerall waies: there they stayed deuising amongst themselues which of those wayes to take: at last, they concluded that each of them should take a seuerall way, and solemnly taking their leaues, with kinde farewells, they betooke each other to their good or bad fortunes.

CHAP. VII.

How Parismenos called the knight of Fame, woon the chief honor of the Tourney, at the Court of the king of Thrace. And hauing won Phylena, the kings daughter, was commaunded in a vision to giue her to Remulus.

PArismenos (no otherwise knowne, but by the name of the Knight of *Fame*, vnder which name, he did passe till he came to the knowledge of his parents) being as is before said in another Chapter, cõ-

ueied

meted by *Amasenus* to his castle for wounded in the battel he had with *Argalus* and *Thenuius*, was so carefully tended by the Dukes Physitians, that in a few daies they had brought him to his perfect remembrances: and within short time after that to his former health, which greatly reioyced the good old Duke, who tooke great felicitie in his company, for the many honorable parts he saw to abound in him. And vpon a time, in the presence of all his Court, demanded the cause of the combat between him & *Argalus*, which he requested as well to know the truth thereof himselfe, as to satisfie the suspitious minds of many that inwardly maligned the discontented knight, vnto whom he declared the truth in manner as is before set downe, saying: This my lord, is the truth of our misaduenture, whom I never mistrusted but alwaies esteemed as my deare friends. *Amasenus* was glad that no cause of discontent could be conceiued against him, by any other of his knights, who enuied him, because his noble gifts darkned their glories: but yet his courteous & kind behauiour in short time expelled that rancor, & they that before were his enemies, began to make good estimation of him, and his fame began to spred it selfe in most parts of *Thrace*, and all that euer beheld him, grew into admiration of his strength, accompanied with such bewtie, as his youth yelded, that had they not knowne the contrary by his prowesse, they would haue taken him for some disguised Lady. Whilest the knight of *Fame* remained in *Amasenus* court, the king of *Thrace* appointed a generall triumph, to beheld for certaine dayes, the occasion whereof, is this.

He had one onelie daughter, named *Thylena*, whose bewtie was inferiour to none: and her gifts of nature were such, as made her much spoken of in many countries: insomuch that many knights came as sutors to obtaine her loue: but she had secretly betrothed her selfe to *Remulus*, one of the knights of her fathers court, without her parents consent: by meanes of whose bewtie, the court of *Thrace* was so full of gallant knights that sought her loue, that the king was much troubled in minde how to bestowe her: and seeing that she did not fancie one more then another, he appointed a generall triumph to be held for fiue daies, and whosoeuer bare away the prize the last day, should marry his daughter. Intending thereby to end his doubt and care that way: thinking, that though his daughter had not a rich and Princely husband, yet she should haue a valiant Champion to defend the price of her beautie.

Amongst the rest of the knights, there was *Guido*, who had long time laed to obtaine her loue, who now reioyced at this deuice, hoping by his valour to beare away the bryde. There was *Trudamor* of *Candie*, who thought none to equall him in strength, and therefore none more forward against the appointed Tryumph. there was *Drio* of *Cicil*, who had sailed from his owne Country thither, who likewise by his strength, at seuerall times, slew three Lyons, who came with resolution to winne *Phylena* for his wife. And many other knights of high account.

The report of this Tryumph came to the knowledge of the knight of Fame, whose minde was kindled with a great desire to goe thither, that he requested *Amasenus* consent, who being desirous any way to pleasure him, gaue him sufficient coyne to furnish himselfe of all things fit for such an attempt. Who caused a most rich Armor of greene to be made, shadowed with trees of gold, presenting a Forrest. In his shield he bare this deuice: A naked man leading a Lyon, with this motto vnderneath, *Ouergone with discontent*. Wherein the expert Artisman had so cunningly imitated his Fancie, that a man by his Armor and shield, might easily vnderstand his meaning. The appointed time of Tryumph drawing nigh, *Amasenus* with a gallant troupe of knights, amongst whom the knight of Fame was chiefe, came to the Thracian Court, whom the king honourably receiued. *Amasenus* hauing done his homage to the king, pitched his Tent without the Court Gates, vpon a little hill hard by the appointed place for Tryumph, where likewise hard by him were the Tents of *Guido*, *Trudamor*, *Drio*, and the three valiant knights of *Candie*: *Tristanius*, *Tennulius*, and *Babulus*, in whose companie were a number of valiant knights, that came thither, some to make triall of their valour, and some of purpose to winne the faire *Phylena*. Likewise there were the Tents of the young king of *Aragon*: who came accompanied with a number of valiant knights, hoping to beare away the prize, that all the plaines were filled with Tents. There might you see knights breaking staues, practising themselues against the day of Tryumph. There might you see other recreating themselues in martiall exercises: there might you heare the neighing of horses, clattering of Armour, cracking of staues, and such companies of knights assembled, as if the richest prize in the world had bin appointed for reward.

Whilst these things were acting, *Phylena* was in great care for

Remulus

Remulus, whom she loued so dearely, that rather then she would part with him, she would indure any miserie whatsoeuer: who likewise addressed himselfe to trie his fortune amongst the rest. And the day before the triumph, *Phylena* secretly getting opportunitie to speake with him, gaue him this assurance of her constancie.

My deare loue quoth she, since my father hath decreed this publicke triumph for the bestowing of me in marriage, because amongst so many Knights as haue sought my loue, I haue affianced my selfe to none of them, but haue chosen you, as the chiefest load-starre of my life and loue, be you yet assured, that though fortune may allot me to bee anothers by conquest, yet none but your selfe shall enioy my loue: and though another may challenge me by right of my fathers decree, yet none but your selfe shall haue true interest in me: and rather then I will yeelde to like of any Knights loue but yours, I will endure either death, or any other torment shall be inflicted vpon me, for you are the Knight that shall conquer my loue: you haue by courtesie wonne my loue, and you shall weare it. No King nor Knight shall robbe me of that which I haue giuen to you: then be not you discomforted, or any way disquieted, but trie your fortune amongst the rest, and fate may happily allot you the conquest as well as any other.

Remulus hearing his Ladies constant resolution, was ouercome with exceeding ioy resoluing to venture as much as any to attaine the conquest, and solacing himselfe so long as their stolne time would permit, in her companie, being by necessitie compelled, they parted.

The next morning, the King of *Thrace* accompanied by a number of personages of estate, brought forth the beautifull and faire *Phylena*, most richly adorned with costly ornaments, wearing vppon her head a crowne of gold, attended by a hundreth Damzels clad in white, and seated her on a scaffold, in the open view of all the Knights there assembled, whose hearts were inamoured with the sweete attaint of her shining beautie, and their courages reuiued with the hope of so rich and precious a prize. Amongst the rest, there was *Remulus*, whose heart was oppresst with distructfull care, to see the Ladie her most esteemed: and his secret protested loue, set as a prize, to wring him from his possession: yet comforted by her faithfull promise, he tooke great felicitie to see that beautie made famous, which he made account to enioy.

The ſecond part

The knight of *Thrace* begonne the tryumph, and the firſt that entred the liſtes was *Anareas*, who was at two courſes vnhorſed by *Cleanthes*, who continued conquerour by the ouerthrowe of many knights, vntill *Bubulus*, one of the three brethren of *Candie*, with violence draue him from his horſe, and burſt one of his ribbes. *Bubulus* vnhorſed many knights afterwards, both of *Thrace* and other ſtraunge countries, and in the end, was vnhorſed himſelfe by *Remulus*, who behaued himſelfe ſo valiantly in the ſight of the Princes, that by the foyle of many knights, hee ended that daies tryumph, to his exceeding honour, reſting conquerour vntill the next morning. When the night was ouerpaſt, the king conducting *Thyſena* in the like manner hee had done the day before ſeated her againe vpon the ſcaffold. When *Remulus* came into the liſtes, braue'y mannaging his prauncing ſteed, whom *Thyſena* beheld with a carefull eye, breathing forth many a deuoute prayer for his good ſucceſſe, who hauing conquered ſome twenty knights in the ende was foyled by *Tamulus*, and ſo with a heauie heart left the field. *Tamulus* continued conquerour by the diſgrace of many knights, almoſt all that day, but in the end, was vnhorſed by the king of *Aragon*.

The king of *Aragon* ended that dayes tryumph, and continued chiefe conquerour the next day, and on the fourth day was vnhorſed by *Triſtramus*, and ſo left the conqueſt hee ſo much deſired.

Afterwardes *Triſtramus* continued that dayes triumph with great braueric, and the fift day was vnhorſed by *Annius*, a knight of *Libia*, who vnhorſed that day ſeuen knights, to his exceeding honour.

The knight of *Fame* all this while kept himſelfe out of ſight, and lodged at a village ſome two myles diſtant from the *Thracian* Court, and according to *Amaſenus* appointment, came toward the liſtes gallantly mounted all alone, and by the vnexpected manner of his ſuddain approach, and by the ſtrange faſhion of his armour, as fortune would, was not generally noted, and in that ſort hee entred the liſtes, reuerencing himſelfe towards the ſcaffold whereon the king was ſeated, and ſetting ſpurres to his horſe, incountred *Annulus*, (and fortune intending at the firſt to do him ſome diſgrace) miſt his courſe, and *Annius* braake his ſtaffe moſt braunely, wherewith the whole aſſembly gaue

an

an exceeding shout, and the knight of *Fame* being inraged with his ouerthrow, charged another course at *Annulus* with great violence, and ouerthrew him, with his heeles vpward, whereat the whole company gaue an exceeding shout againe, euery one thinking he had purposely lost his first course, by which meanes all were desirous to see him run againe, which the discontented knight performed so gallantly, that he vnhorsed another knight of *Libia*, that thought to reuenge *Annulus* ouerthrow.

Guido beholding thereat, and seeing how the beholders were affected, noted him more specially, thinking by his foyle to winne some speciall honour, and with the more bravery to continue the rest of the triumph, and attaine the prize taking a strong staffe, prepared to incite the knight of *Fame*, who by that time had dismounted three or foure other knights.

The people seeing the valiant *Guido* come to the lists, who was well knowne to all, thought then surely to see the discontented knights honour at an end, for on him and *Orio*, the chiefest soppose of conquest depended.

Guido encountred the knight of *Fame* the first time, without offering or sustaining disauantage, which inwardly vexed him to the heart, that charging him againe the second time, notwithstanding all his force, he could not once mooue him in his saddle. The discontented knight, likewise feeling the puissance of his enemie, was exceedingly inraged, that taking another course, they met with such force, that the earth shooke with the force of their encounter, and their Launces shiuered into a thousande peeces, passing by without any shew or signe of odds.

The king of *Thrace* seeing the day so farre spent, sent a messenger to intreat them to leaue the further triall of their doubtful conquest vntill the next day, which they both consented vnto.

The next morning these two Champions came againe, with desirous mindes to bee reuenged each of the other, and met two courses with such bravery, that the people with great shouts applauded their chiualry, the knight of *Fame* chusing the strongest staffe that he could finde, meant now or neuer to giue or take the foyle, and rushing forcibly to encounter *Guido*, he met him so violently, that *Guidos* Horse yeelded to the force of their encounter, and falling downe, burst his

legge:

legge: the people seing *Guido* downe, were drawne into a wonderfull amazement what this Knight should be.

Phylena likewise was much tormented in minde, in her fancie allotting him the chiefest honour, and seing her was some Knight of a straunge Country, fearing least he obtaining her by conquest, should carry her farre from her fathers Court, and so quite from the sight and company of her deare friend *Remulus*, that she was drawn into such a sad de conceit, that her heart seemed to melt thereat. *Trudamor* seing *Guido* so foyled, with great brauerie entred the lists, and encountred the knight of *Fame*, who likewise charged him with many braue courses, that in the ende, the conquest remained in great doubt betwixt them, still continuing their encounters with exceeding courage, that *Trudamor* with all his strength could not any whit disaduantage the Knight of *Fame*, nor he by his force get any odds of *Trudamor*: that in the ende, *Trudamor* thirsting for the honour of the title, and longing to enioy *Phylena* for his Bride, tracing softly to his races ende, went towards the knight of *Fame*, who with the like behauiour met him, to whom *Trudamor* said as followeth.

Knight, I see we haue no aduantage against each other by this exercise, let vs then finish the doubtfulnesse of this strife with our swords, which is the readiest meane to make one of vs conqueror. With all my heart (answered he againe) your proffer so well agreeth with my fancie, as I neither can nor will deny the same: wherewith they drew their swords, and charged each other with furious blows whose courage each beholder greatly commended.

The King of *Thrace* beholding the noble valour of the Knight of *Fame*, was exceedingly well affected towards him: in so much, that he desired none might enioy his daughter but he: betweene whom *Trudamor* continued a most braue combat, till in the ende, the knight of *Fame* had so grieuously wounded him, and in so many places, that all the beholders accounted *Trudamor* as halfe vanquished: and what with effusiō of blood, and ouermastred by the knight of *Fame*: strength, his armour giuing way to euery blowe, was readie to fall from his backe: which the knight of *Fame* perceiuing, staged: vttering these words. Most noble knight (quoth he) I see the danger you are in, therefore I wish you to yeeld your selfe, for it is not your death that I seeke: and rather then I will be guiltie thereof, I will yeild vp the praie I shal winne by your conquest.

Trudamor

Trudamor hearing his speeches, exceedingly admired his courtesie, and being readie to speake, his sences by weaknesse beganne to fayle, and he was taken from his horse to haue his gaping wounds stenched. The whole multitude of beholders noting the singular valour of the knight of *Fame*, and how courteously he had abstained from killing *Trudamor*, whose life was in his power, were so wel affected towards him, that they shouted and reioyced exceedingly at his victorie.

The king seeing the day growne to an end, came from the scaffolde, and with great intreaties got the knight of *Fame* to go with him to the Court, where hee was most honorably entertained, and had his wounds carefully searcht by the Phisitians, who found none of them daungerous. *Amasenus* seeing the knight of *Fame* had won the chiefest honour of the triumph for that day, came to the king, and reported to him how long he had bene with him, and the manner of his first arriuall in that countrie, seeking to increase the kings affection towardes him, by entring into many exceeding commendations of his valor, vertue, and courtesie: that the king did him all the honour that might bee for that night, intending after the triumph ended, to expresse his loue toward him by all meanes he could deuise.

Early the next morning, being the last day of the triumph, the king was sommoned to the fielde, by the shrill sound of the knight of *Fames* trumpet, who was gallantly mounted, attended by an infinit number of people, that came to glut their eyes with beholding him: there was now no talke but of the knight of *Fame*, his fame had fedde the eares of all, in so much that such a number of people thronged to see the last daies triumph, that the place could not containe their multitude. The knights of *Thrace* marvelled what hee should be, and for that he was vnknowne, the straunge knights somewhat reioyced, that the prize should be carried from *Thrace*. Amongst the rest, *Remulus* noting his exceeding courtesie, and paying more narrowly then any of the rest, into his behaviour, reioyced in his mind that so honourable, valiant, and courteous a knight should possesse his deare *Phylena*, and aboue all the knights of the Court, he was most readie to entertaine the knight of *Fame*, with all courtesie, and wisht that none but he might beare away the chiefest honour of the triumph.

The king hauing againe in most sumptuous and royal sort, seated his daughter vpon the scaffold, attended the first encounter that should be giuen to the knight of *Fame*, which was performed by *Parrus*, a

knight of *Cicill* with great brauerie, but the second course hee measured his length on the earth, as others had done before him. Next him came a knight of *Libia*, who had like fortune to *Parrus*: *Guido* being not satisfied with desire of victorie, but in putting the cause of his lost ouerthrow to his horse, not himselfe, changed his armour, and came into the listes againe intending to reuenge his foyle: but before he came, *Drio* of *Cicill* had broken two staues with the knight of *Fame*, and before he could take the third course, *Guido* instigated by rage, ranne against the knight of *Fame*, and intercepted him. *Drio* disdaining thereat, strooke *Guido* such a forcible blowe on the head, with the trunchion of a staffe, that he made him stagger. Wherewith *Guido* drewe his sword, and assayled *Drio* with great furie, betweene whom began a most braue combat, vntill the knight of *Fame* stept betwixt them, and parted them, vttering these speeches. Knights (quoth he) what meaneth this outrage? why contend you betwixt your selues, and leaue me, with whom you should principally deale, vnassayed? thinke you I am not of sufficiencie to deale with you both? but that you must thus dishonourably, seeke with priuate quarrels to disturbe our triall? But notwithstanding his speeches, they began to assayle each other againe, which so inraged him, that drawing his sword, he first strooke at *Guido*, and then at *Drio*, offering to combat with them both, that the issue of this combat seemed to be most intricate. Sometimes the knight of Fame assayled *Guido*, and he resisting, when *Drio* lent his blowes to both: and the knight of Fame intending to reuenge him on *Drio*, was againe assayled by *Guido*.

The King perceiuing what danger this tripartite fight might breed, commanded the Champions to be parted, which being done, the Judges gaue order, that the knight of Fame should continue his course with *Drio*. This conclusion being made, the knight of Fame sheathing his sword, went to the races end so fully incensd with rage, that his eyes smarted with vexation. *Drio* likewise was so fully puft with fury, that he vowed at that course to ende the triall of the combat: that both of them taking scope ynough, to meete with the greater swiftnesse, set spurs to their steeds sides, and with exceeding violence, and shiuering their Lances into a thousand spelles, which sung in the ayre: before the steeds met, *Drio* winding his raines, intending to ouerthrow his enemie vnawares, the steed vnacquainted to such custome, bare his head aloft, and the knight of Fames steede keeping on his continued course, with great strength ouerturned both horse and man, that *Drio* laie al-

most

most bruised to death with the waight of his horse. *Guido* attending the next triall, had readily couched his staffe, but the knight of Fame being extreamly inraged, not well knowing, nor caring what he did (hauing secret intelligence before giuen him, that it was *Guido*, the knight that he had already vanquished) set spurs to his horse and ran at him with his sword poynt, that had he not auoyded him, he had pearced the same quite through his body: who turning himselfe with his sword drawne, assayled the knight of Fame, betweene whom continued a most braue combat a long space, vntill *Guido* by his vnresistable blowe, was greeuously wounded: who intending to reuenge himselfe, stroke a most violent blow, which lighting crosse his helmet, brake his sword: which the knight of Fame seeing, cast down his owne, disdaining to haue any odds of weapon, and leaping himselfe close to *Guido*, with long striuing and maine force, in the end flung him down from his horse: whereat with the people gaue such a shout, that the earth seemed to shake with the Eccho of their voyces: by which time, the nights blacke mantel began to ouerspred the whole earth, and there appeared no more Combattants against the knight of Fame, but to his vnspeakable honor he remained victor. Then presently he was in tryumphant manner (according to their customs) with the noyse of Trumpets conducted to the kings Pallace: where the king and all the vanquished knights receiued him with great honour. Amongst the rest, was the king of *Aragon*, a most gallant and braue knight at armes, who greatly desired to be acquainted with this braue Champion, vsing him, with the rest of the knights, with all courtesie and kindnesse. After many solemne welcomes were past on euery side, and he vnarmed, the king speaking to him, vttered these speaches. Most noble knight, whose prowesse hath deserued euerlasting commendations according to my former decree, and the promist reward to the conqueror, I giue to your hands my daughter, the onely heire of my kingdome. Then taking *Phylena* by the hand, he deliuered her to him. The knight of Fame with great reuerence kissing her hand, vttered these speaches. Most sacred Princesse, how can I sufficiently reioyce, that am this day enrolled in the highest type of heauenly felicitie, by being vnworthily preferred to haue your custody. Yet I beseech you vouchsafe me (though a stranger) that bounty, as to esteem of me, as one that is altogether bowed to your seruice, and though by right of conquest I may iustly challenge you for my owne, yet be you assured, I will request nothing at your hands but what shall be granted with your free consent: but I rest yours to command, disposer of, in all humble dutie.

Which words being ended, (he that neuer before kist Ladies lippes) with great reuerence toke of her a sweete kisse: and she with a beanie heart and milde behauiour, yeelding her selfe as his to dispose of, which she was constrained to do by her fathers promise, and the knights worthie deserts: though inwardly in her heart shee deuoted all kinde loue and affection to *Remulus*: on whom being by, shee cast many a milde and modest looke, inwardly wishing hee were the man might claime her by right of conquest, as well as by the true affection shee bare him.

That night the knight of Fame was honourably feasted by the King, and afterwards conducted to a most Princely lodging. And being now alone he began to meditate of his estate, and to ponder how happily he had escaped shipwrake, and was preferred to such high dignitie as to marry the daughter and onely heire of a king: withal, he began to call to minde euery particular thing hee could remember of his birth and bringing vp in the Iland of *Rockes*, his fancie perswading him, that he was borne vnto some greater personage then he yet knewe of: withall, well viewing a iewell which he had kept euer since his nurse was slaine, which she gaue him in charge to keepe charily, which thoughts, and withall, a secret instinct of nature, which he felt in himself ayming at higher matters, settled a perswasion in his thoghts, that he was borne of royall race, and therefore meete to match with a kings daughter. And calling to minde the exceeding beautie of *Phylena*, imprinting in his fancie a perfect remembrance of her graces, sweet countenance, and milde behauiour, hee felt a secret stirring and throbbing at his heart, which disturbed all his senses, that he was as it were transformed into a kinde of pleasant delight, wherewith hee fell into a dead sleepe.

In middest of his sleepe, the Goddesse *Venus* pitying the troubled thoughts of her deuoted subiect *Phylena*, willing to extoll the fame of this knight, appeared vnto him in a vision, standing by his beds side, with a cleare burning taper in his one hand, and holding a most beautifull Ladie in the other, of such diuine perfections, that heauen nor earth could not in his fancie frame a more diuine essence of purtie: the Lady *Venus* vttering these words.

Then

Thou Knight of Fame,
Regard the words I speake:
Seeke not by force,
Loues constant bandes to breake.
Phylena *faire,*
The beauteous heire of Thrace
Her constant loue,
On Remulus *doth place.*
Desire not then,
Her liking to attaine,
But from her loue,
Thy fantasie refraine.
Thy conqueſt right,
Giue him that hath her loue:
And from their hearts,
The cares they hide, remoue.
This Lady bright, thy fansies shall subdue,
Then to her loue, be constant iuſt and true.
Firſt seeke her out, then to her pleasure tend:
To win her loue, thy whole affection bend.
Of Royall race, thy ſelfe art rightly ſprong,
Loſt by thy friends, when thou of art were young.
Thy fathers fame, hath fild the world with praiſe,
Thy mothers gifts, her laſting honours raiſe.
Bend thy deſires,
Their comfort to procure,
That for thy loſſe,
Sad ſorrowes do procure.

Whileſt the Goddeſſe vttered theſe words, the Knight of *Fame* diligently beheld the exceeding beautie of the Lady ſhee held in her hand, and thinking to haue demaunded her name, ſhee preſently vaniſht: wherewith he awaked.

The remembrance of this Viſion, brake him into a confuſed multitude of thoughts: one while perſwading himſelfe, it was but a dreame and not to be regarded, and then againe aſſuring himſelfe it was a Viſion, like to that which appeared to him in the Iland

of Rocks, but chiefly such a secret impression of the Ladies beautie was fired in his remembrance, that hee quite forsooke and forgot the least thought of *Phylena*, whose beautie in his fancie, was nothing comparable to her diuine perfections, that calling to minde euery particular note hee had seene, the perfect *Idea* of the Ladies countenance, fauour and beautie, was so deeply imprinted in his heart, that no other thought could finke in his braine, but that she was the Lady he should honour, that he bowed to search the world throughout to find her, and come to the knowledge of his parents. In these cogitations he spent the rest of that night.

Early in the morning, hee was honoured with all diuersities of curtesies, and most royally feasted of the King, and by his appointment, should be affianced to *Phylena*, within six dayes. The Knight of *Fame* remembring the Vision being most commonly in company of *Phylena*, diligently noted, which might be the Knight *Phylena* loued, and soone perceiued that it was *Remulus*, who amongst the knights of *Thrace*, had sought most meanes to honour him. Who little thought the knight of *Fame* hadde noted the kindnesse betwixt him and *Phylena*: but hee noting all circumstances, perceiued that *Phylena* was deeply inthralled in the bands of constant loue: for though thee were in talke with him, yet her eye was continually on *Remulus*, glauncing so many sweete lookes (intermingled with sighes) towards him, that hee thought it a most discurteous and inhumaine deede to part them. And once taking occasion when *Phylena* was in a deepe studie, he said. Deare Lady, may I be so bolde as breake off your sad studie, wherewith you adde heauinesse to your minde: and expell this carefull disposition, and rather spend your time in mirth and pleasure, I haue often noted your heauinesse, which maketh mee suppose my vnworthinesse to bee the cause thereof: but seeing my interest is such, as that I may clayme you for my owne, I beseech you doe not so much disgrace my trauailes, as not to vouchsafe mee that kindnesse belonged to the condition of my conquest, and your fathers decree: and if you esteeme mee, be not so vnknowne, as yet not to haue deserued your loue, impose some hard taske, and I will vndertake it for your sake: and not only labour to winne your loue by desert, as by the tryumphe I haue attained the interest of your person. But I perceiue your cares are such, for some other great occasion, that I am an vnwelcome guest to your companie, and my other hath Arcadie

attaines

attained your ſweete loue: which if be ſo, ſweete Ladie hide not the ſame from mée, but make me priuie thereto, for I am not of that rude diſpoſition, to challenge any thing at your handes, or inforce you to any thing, but what ſhall ſtand with your liking: and though your vertues force you to yéeld conſent to your fathers decree, yet conſidering that loue is not wonne with the ſworde, but with a mutuall conſent of the heart, I yéelde my ſelfe to bée cenſored by you, and giue my right of triall into your handes, and the intereſt I attained by conqueſt, I ſurrender to your cenſure, to be reuoked or eſtabliſhed.

Phylena hearing his wordes, with teares ſtanding in her eyes, made this reply: Moſt curteous Knight, howſoeuer I haue ſetled my fancie heretofore, that is nowe countermaunded by my fathers promiſe, and your intereſt, that I am not mine owne to diſpoſe of, but muſt in all humblenéeſſe reſt at your diſpoſition. And if an other had my promiſe of loue, yet nowe I muſt reuoke that promiſe, and labour to attend your liking: therefore I wholely commit my ſelfe according to your right of conqueſt, into your curteous hands.

Deare Lady (quoth he) knowe this, that I account my ſelfe vnworthy of that honour, and am vnwilling any way to contradict your will, or diſturbe your quiet: but knowing that which you vertuouſly conceale, will ſurrender my eſtate to the Knight you moſt fancie: for the honour I haue wonne, ſhall be my ſufficient reward: therefore I beſeech you, conceale no part of your minde from me, for I will not denie to performe any thing you ſhall command, but will hazard both life and honour to ſatiſfie your fancie, and any way procure your content.

Phylena with a bluſhing countenaunce, made this ſhort replie: Moſt noble Knight, *Remulus* is the knight I haue long eſteemed, but muſt now forſake him, or purchaſe my parents diſcontent, and denie you the right of your conqueſt. The Knight of *Fame* ſmiling at the inward conceit of his Viſion, made this anſwere. And deare Lady, I will yéelde my intereſt to *Remulus*, onely to worke your content: for he hath worthily deſerued to be beloued of you: beſides the honour he hath done me, notwithſtanding I might be the onely man to hinder his content, ſhewéth the abúdant vertues that rule his hart. He had not ſcarce ended thoſe wordes, but *Remulus* féeling his cares to glow, thinking all time tedious out of his Ladies ſight, came into ỹ gallery, wher they were in priuate

priuate conference: but ſeeing them (halfe repenting his intruſion) would haue ſtept backe: towards whom, the knight of *Fame* came, leading the Princeſſe by the hand, and contrary to *Remulus* expectation, ſaide, Curteous knight, your intereſt in this Lady, is greater then mine, for you haue her heart, and I but her hand: which I ſurrender vnto you, with all the ſtate I can claime in her by right of conqueſt: and ſo effectually will I deale with the king, to your liking, that he ſhall confirme that to you, which I ſhould poſſeſſe by his graunt. *Remulus* hearing his ſpeeches, was ſo rauiſhed with ioy, that he could not tel what anſwere to make him, and *Phylena*s heart lept within her, being moſt glad, fortune had effected that meanes for her, to enioy her deare knight *Remulus*.

The knight of *Fame*, hauing his thoughts troubled with the remembrance of his trauels in ſearch of his vnknowne Lady, and willing to leaue them to their ſecret content, with all curteſie (after many ſpeeches paſt) departed from them: who tooke ſuch felicitie in the aſſurance he had giuen them of obtaining the Kings conſent, that their ioy was without compare, ſpending their time in ſweete and pleaſant communication. Afterwards the knight of *Fame* grew into great familiaritie with *Remulus*, and the day for the ſolemnization of the wedding being come, her with *Phylena*, in great pompe, were conducted to the Chappel, to be affianced togither, where the knight of *Fame* kneeling downe, deſired the king to grant him one requeſt: who ſware by his Crowne and Kingdome, to grant it him, whatſoeuer it were. Moſt noble King (quoth he) my humble deſire is, that you wold without further doubt, ratifie that which I ſhall performe in the behalfe of the Princeſſe. Thou ſhalt not be denied quoth the King.

Then the knight of *Fame* ryſing vp, tooke *Phylena* by the hand, and gaue her to *Remulus*: the King being aſtoniſhed thereat, yet remembring his oath, ſaid. Since by right ſhe is yours, & this being with her liking, I giue her freely to thee *Remulus*, & withall, adopt thee mine heire, with her after my death. *Remulus* kneeling, thankt his Maieſtie: and preſently they were affianced togither, and the rights and ſolemnities of the wedding performed with admirable pompe, to their ioy, and the high honour of the knight of *Fame*.

CHAP

CHAP. VIII.

How Archas diſcouered Soranas deceit, and miſſing Violetta, ſlue her. And how Violetta lighted on a Hermits Cell, who conducting her towards Bohemia, died: and of the miſeries ſhee indured afterwardes, vntill ſhee was entertained at Panuamus Caſtle, neare the Forreſt of Arde.

ARchas (as before is declared in the firſt Chapter) hauing coutcht himſelfe by *Sorana*, whom he ſuppoſed to be *Violetta*, without ſpeaking a word, and hauing ſomewhile embraced her in his armes, beganne his daliance, whom *Sorana* ſo cunningly handled, that (notwithſtanding his former familiaritie) he perceiued nothing but that it was *Violetta* indeed. At the firſt ſhe made a ſhew of a ſtrangeneſſe, but afterwards indured whatſoeuer he proffered, with whom hee ſpent that night, giuing no reſpite to ſleepe, but greedily ſatiſfying both their deſires, vntill the morning approaching, *Archas* according to his miſtreſſe cõmand, departed, and left his Paramour in his bedde, his fancie perſwading him that ſhe was the moſt ſweeteſt Ladie in the world, which ſo reioyced his hart, that he ſpent that forenoone in much mirth, but miſſing *Sorana*, for that he had not ſeene her all that day, he went to her chamber, where being entred, hee ſawe ſome of *Violettas* attires and ornaments confuſedly caſt about, and all things in ſuch diſorder, that hee could not tell what to thinke, at laſt he enquired of euery one for her, but none could tell what was become of her, vntill comming to the Gardiants, they told him that *Sorana* went out of the caſtle the laſt night, and that ſhe had left with them his ring. *Archas* ſeeing the ring, knowing that he had giuen it to none but *Violetta*, was ſo amazed & aſtoniſhed with doubt, that he preſently ſuſpected *Violetta* was eſcapt: and comming to the chamber where ſhe ſhould haue beene, ſoftly drawing the bed curtaines, found that *Sorana* had beene his bedfellow in ſtede of *Violetta*, who after her paſtime was fallen a ſleepe. *Archas* not perfectly knewe that *Violetta* was eſcaped in *Soranas* diſguiſe, and thought that it could not be, but that ſhee muſt bee conſented thereto, which cauſed him to fetch his ſword, determining to end her life: but by that time he was returned, ſhe was awake, and ſeeing him comming

towards her, with his sword bent to her death, being terrified therewith, she gaue such shrikes as many of the seruants hearing the noyse, came running into the chamber, but he being incenst with exceeding rage, for *Violettas* losse, and inwardly fretting at his deceit, with repentance that he had bestowed his loue on that loathsome creature, who now seemed most vgly, in respect of the diuine and sweete Lady he supposed he had embraced, caught holde on her, and by the haire of the head, dragd her out of the bed into the middest of the chamber, vttering these words. Most detested strumpet, couldst thou not haue contented to consent to *Violettas* escape, but thou must also betray my loue to thy loathsome lust? was not the fauour I daily sheiwed thee, sufficient to deter thy mind from offering me that abuse? deceiuing my expectation, betraying my life by her escape? I could peraduenture haue remitted the one, if thou haddest not beene guiltie in both: but neuer shalt thou reioyce in my fall, and little pleasure shalt thou reape by thy nights worke: wherwith, not suffering her to make him answere, assuredly perswading himselfe she was guiltie in both, he thrust his sword quite through her body, and there in that vndecent sort left her, giuing many a grone, with the date of her life. The seruants seeing this, couered her body, and afterwards buried it. *Archas* presently arming himselfe giuing speciall charge to the Gardiants to keepe diligent watch, posted that way he thought best in her search.

Violetta by this time was wandred a great way, care hastning her steppes, and feare to be againe by him surprized, tooke away the tediousnesse of trauell, at last forsaking the beaten way, she wandred aside into a most desart and vnfrequented place, being so full fraught with trees and little springs, that there she thought was the safest harbour, wherin to remaine vndescried, being tired with travel, and pestest with care, she sate down vpon a banke fit to refresh her selfe. She had not long staied in that place, but she beheld an aged man, whose yeares made him stoupe to the earth wards, carrying a fewe drie sticks vnder his arme. *Violetta* thinking she might repose some confidence in his vertues, because of his yeares, drew towards him: who seeing so beautifull a Ladie in that vnfrequented place vnattended, exceedingly marueiled, to whom she said. Ah good father, whose yeares beare reuerence, will you vouchsafe a distressed Ladie succour, who by extreame miseries compulsion, am wandred to this vnknowne place, sore wearied with trauell, and in requitall of your kindnesse, my prayers shall in-wa-

innocate the heauens to graunt you felicitie, and my reward sufficient to content you for your paines. The old man hearing her speeches, made this answere: Faire Lady, my homely Cell is not worthie to receiue your person, but such as it is, you shall be hartily welcome thereto: for I desire to liue no longer, then to extend my small assistance to such as are in distresse, but especially to such harmelesse creatures as your selfe: therefore pleaseth you with kindnesse to accept what succour my abilitie will affoord, or what counsell my experience may giue you, you shall receiue both with a willing heart. And for that I see your trauell, (vpon what occasion to me as yet vnknowne) hath both wearied you, and this colde earth whereon you sat, may indanger your health, giue me your hand, and I will guide you what ayde my weake strength will permit, to guide you to my Cell, which is hard by. Do so good father (quoth she) and I thanke you most hartily, where I will disclose to you my vnfortunate misha: that said, she lent her selfe vpon his aged arme, so wearied with trauell, that she scarce could set her feete vpon the grassie earth, for hurting them. His Cell, it was no other but a hollow caue, which the poore olde man by his owne industrie, had cut and vndermined vnder the side of a rockie hill, which was wel contriued, hauing his lodging seuerall from the rest, and so artificially had he framed his Chimnie, that through a hollowe vaulte hee conueyed the smoke, at the gate whereof, ran a most pleasant spring, where the cleare water striuing with the smooth pebbles, made a burbling noyse, where the comfortable beames of golden *Phœbus* had full force. On the other side was a sweete spring, where the birds kept continuall pleasant recording harmonie. Assone as *Violetta* was entred this olde mans Palace he seated her soft vpon a chaire, giuing her all the courteous entertainment he could, and presently brought forth such cates as he was prouided of: which was, white bread, cheese, and apples: her drinke being the cleare brooke water that ran by his Cell dore, whereto, because he would amend the taste to her liking, hee mingled *Aquauitie*. *Violetta* being hungrie, thought his poore prouision in that quiet place, daintie fare wherwith she stenched her hunger: in the meane time, the old man had heat water and hearbes for to bath her ouertrauelled feete in, which shee kindly accepted, perceiuing that it came as willingly from the old mans heart as euer good deed came from any other: with bathed her feete. This done, *Violetta* desired the olde man to seat himself downe by her, (who taking a stoole, sat down right against her, fixing his eyes vpon her face) with all, he began to speake as followeth.

The ſecond part

God Father (quoth ſhe) the kindneſſe I finde in your entertainment, theweth the vertues that rule your heart, which maketh me no whit doubt to command the dangerous report of my tragicall miſfortune to your ſecrecie, neither need I require any further aſſurance, then your promiſe already paſt, to extend your ayde to my diſtreſſe. Therefore thus it is. I was borne in *Theſſalie*, and there wedded to the noble and courteous knight *Pollipus*, who came lately to *Bohemia*, with the moſt noble and famous Prince *Parſimus*, who hath brought hither the kings daughter of *Theſſalie*, the vertuous Princeſſe *Laurana*: we had not ſtaied long in the Bohemian Court in great ioy, but thus our felicitie was croſt, my Lord and I one day) inflamed by the heate of the ſunne to ſeeke ſome cole ſhadow, wandred from the Court into a pleaſant greue, where haunted a wilde Beare, whome my louing knight eſpying, purſued, and I fearing leaſt ſome harme might betide him, compelled, by deſire of his welfare, thought to haue followed him, but wandred a quite contrarie way, and being gotten out of the wood fearing to returne backe, was by *Archas* (to me before vnknowne) by cunning deceit conueyed to his Caſtle, his promiſe being to carry me backe to the Bohemian Court, where when he had remained ſome two daies, he certified me falſly (which I afterwards perceiued) that *Pollipus* was dead, which I believing, tooke ſo heauily, that I was often in daunger of my life thereby: but in ſmall time I plainly found his falſehood, and vnderſtood his intent, which was, to detaine me in his keeping to ſatiate his luſt, which grew to ſuch furie, that ſurpriſing me vnawares in his Garden, he would haue layed me, had not a Gentlewoman by my cries repaired to the place where I was, and thereby preuented him, Whom I made priuie to all my ſecrets, by whoſe meanes late yeſternight I ſtole from the Caſtle: now good father (quoth ſhe) counſell me how to eſcape his hands, who I know maketh all diligent ſearch for me and vnleſſe you helpe me, I am like to fall into his hands againe, which rather then I will do, I will endure a thouſand deaths.

The old man had all this while diligently noted euery circumſtance of her diſcourſe, making this anſwer: Lady, I perceiue by your ſpeech what miſeries you haue vndergone by *Archas* treacherie, whoſe infamous deeds hath made his name famous, being the chiefe Gouernour of theſe mountaines: indeede extreamly and generally hated, who delighteth in no vertuous action, but continually addicts his minde to vil-

lanie,

lanie, and vnknightly deedes, out of whose hands, you are most happy to haue escaped: neither are you in the countrey of *Bohemia* (as you suppose) but far distant from thence: and the best meanes for you to get thither, is to change your habit, whither my selfe so pleaseth you, will be your weake, yet trustie guide.

Violettaes heart leapt within her, for ioy to heare his speeches, which she presently put in practise, giuing him a Iewell: which he at the next towne exchanged for such homely weedes as they deemed to be fittest to shrowd her from being discried. Wherewith hauing apparelled her selfe, she departed with the olde man, who left his Cell to the keeping of his sonne, who was seruant to a wealthie Burgo dwelling thereby. The first dayes iourney they ouerpast with ease, shortning the tediousnesse of the way, with the olde mans discourses: and at night rested themselues as conueniently as they might, vpon the colde earth, and in this sort they iourned on some three dayes, vntill their prouision began to decay: and they were without hope of getting any more to supply their want, for that they were entered into a desolate Wildernesse: which they could not ouerpasse in three or foure of their short dayes iourney. *Violetta* of the twaine, was the best trauceller: for the old man by reason of his withered age, was some tyred, hauing no such inward conceit to driue him forwards, as she had procured by a longing desire to see her deare knight *Pollipus*, that she wisht a thousand times that her guide had beene young, and of better strength to indure their iourney. But thus contrary, it fell out the olde mans time of death then approched, who hauing taken a surfet, with lying on the colde earth, began to be sickly: and in the ende so weake, that he could indure no further trauell: but sitting downe vpon a banke side, failing an extreame faintnesse possesse his heart, hee vttered these speeches: Vnfortunate wretch that I am, that am not able to performe my promise made to you most curteous Lady: but must heere leaue you in distresse, and without comfort: would that my destenie had not suffered me to liue vntil this instant, for that your good fortune had bin so fauourable to haue lighted vpon a safer guide. That you might haue escaped the desolation, I am most vnhappily like to leaue you in: this vnfrequented wildernesse, affordeth no release to your cares: but after my death, your trauels are to begin a fresh, being without a guide, which may chance to bring your vertuous perfections into some further danger: onely this comfort remaineth to my carefull dying heart, that your

habit may be a meane to bring you safe from all dangers. This vnfrequented place is so full of vncertaine wayes, that I know not almost which of them to counsell you to follow: onely this, keepe the Sunne at his setting, right before you, for that way lyeth the Bohemian Court, and so sweete Lady, I commit you to all good fortune: for I see the date of my wretched life is at an ende, wishing all prosperous successe to your iourney, all happie escape out of daunger, and your owne sweete hearts content: desiring you to make no tarriance to prouide my Funerall, but leaue me in this place: for little account do I make of my aged bodie. And so againe, I wish you all happie felicitie, with a blessed and ioyfull ende of your cares: which words being ended, he gaue vp the ghost.

Violetta seeing the good olde man dead, was ouercome with such infinite multitudes of cares, that shee had much adoo to keepe her selfe from following him, that she sate there sheading abundance of teares, and what with the remembrance of the desolateneese of the place, & the dead bodie of the olde man, which was a fearefull coarse to looke vpon: her senses were drawne into such amazed terror, that shee was halfe beside her selfe therewith: and being agast with the sight of the olde man, hasted with all the speede shee could, onwards her iourney, but darke night approaching, her minde was then rackt with such confused feare, that sometimes shee thought the olde mans Ghoast haunted her, which appalled her senses with deadly ghastfull terror: then shee thought shee heard some wilde beast behinde her, readie to seize vppon her, which made her forsake the place where shee hadde shrowded her selfe, and seeke an other in her fancie more safe: and in a multitude of these cares, shee ouerpast that tedious night, vttering many a sighe for the mornings cheerfull approach: which being come, she againe betooke her selfe to her solitarie trauell, inwardly sorrowfull for her late misfortune: but most of all terrified with feare to meete *Gerebus*, thinking to bend her steppes towardes *Bohemia*.

But Fortune entending to augment her cares, and lengthen her trauailes, caused her to wander a quite contrarie way, and shee nothing misdoubting, but supposing shee was in the best way, kept on her steppes some three dayes without intermission, and at last espyed an auncient Castle, whose craggie walles were readie to fall

fall to the earth, by reason of age, where she was constrained by reason of extreame hunger, to seeke for succour: and comming to the gate, she saw an aged old man with a sad countenance, keeping the entrance to whom *Violetta* spake in this sort. Good aged sir, vouchsafe a poore distressed woman some reliefe, being wandred far out of my way, and for want of food, am like to perish.

He lifting up his head, made this answere: this place affordeth small comfort, because every part thereof is repleate with sorrow: but come in, and what entertainment it yeeldeth, you shall be welcome vnto: that saide, hee shut the gate, and brought her into the Castle, where were a fewe servants in mourning attire: seeming by their habit and sad countenances, to be quite overgrowne with discontent: and in a roome severall by it selfe, sate a beautiful Damzel, with her eyes swolen with griefe: to whom the porter brought *Violetta*, and said. Madame *Clarina*, this distressed woman craveth some succour, being wandred far from her way, whom I will leave with you, because I must returne to my charge. *Clarina* rising vp, tooke *Violetta* by the hand, and desired her to sit downe by her, to whom she said.

This place by reason of our misfortune, may rather adde care to augment your sorrows, then comfort your distresse: for the misery that hath lately befallen vs, is such, as hath exyled all ioy from our hearts. And because you shall be acquainted with the truth of all, I will relate the circumstance of our tragedie.

There remaineth a Gyant not far from this place, called *Brandamor*, in a castle of such invincible strength, as it is impossible to be vanquished by legions of souldiers, who taketh delight in nothing but crueltie, and vnlawfull attempts. Who vpon a time, chanced to arrive at this Castle, and by euill fortune, espied me walking abroad, in compannie of my parents, my brother *Parismus*, and two of my fathers servants. And (I knowe not by what desire thereto drawne, his mind being apt to any mischief) he viewing me, liked my beautie, & such a disordinate desire stirred in his breast to obtaine the same, that he shrowded himselfe in secret, vntill he espied his fittest opportunitie, and suddenly set vppon my father, offering to take me away by violence: my father denying him, vntill the Gyant being inraged, drewe his swoorde and assailed him, whom in short time he slewe: which my mother and I perceiving, fled towards this Castle, and in the meane time my brother

Parismus

Pannamus continued fight against him a good space, but being vnable to cope with so mighty an enemie, was by reason of many grieuous wounds, in the ende left by him for dead: which done, *Brandamor* leauing our fight, hasted after vs: but before he could come at vs, we attained the Castle, and rescued our selues from his possession. But when he saw himselfe disappointed, he made as though he had departed from hence, and contrarie to our thoughts, he hid himselfe secretly amongst the bushes. My mother being ouercome with extreame sorrow for my fathers death, neither regarding doubt, nor daunger, went back with hope to recouer him, whom *Brandamor* surprized and carried away with him, hoping by her imprisonment, to win her consent to yeeld me into his hands. My brother *Pannamus*, within a while, recouered his feet, not knowing of my mothers misfortune, with great danger of his life, crawled home: whom I had much adoe to preserue from death, and now he is departed towards the Forrest of *Arde*, where the giants castle standeth, to inuent means to set my mother at libertie: and this night is the promised time of his returne. And thus haue you heard the whole circumstance of our sorrow: which when she had said, abundance of teares issued from her eyes, which made *Violetta* (whose tender heart was readie to relent at euery sad discourse) accompanie her lamentations with watrie eyes: withall, remembring how vnfortunately she was still crost in her desires, which was to attaine to *Bohemia*, and how contrary to her expectation she was wanded quite an other way, and brought both in danger of her life, and to that poore and distressed estate, her heart was prest with such inward sorrow, that she could not stay the passage of her teares already begun: but such a violent flood distilled from her precious eye-balles, that *Clariana* could not choose but note them: and withall, grew into an earnest desire to know the cause of that extraordinarie passion: withall, wel viewing her beautie and liuely countenance: collecting into her fancie euerie circumstance, shee beganne to suppose that *Violetta* was no such as her apparell shewed, but of better byrthe and bringing vppe, then by her attire was shewen, that desiring to bee relieued of those doubts which rose in her fancie, she uttered these speaches.

I know not quoth shee, what title to ascribe vnto you, for that I am ignorant of whence and what you are, but if you will commit the secret thereof to me, I promise you both to conceale the same (if any such

made be: and alse to do my vttermost to pleasure you any way. Therefore I desire you to impart the recital thereof to my secrecie, that knowing your estate, I may know how to vse you according to your worthinesse.

Violetta being desirous to seeke any meanes for to comfort her selfe, made this reply. I most hartily thank you for offering me so large a proffer of your assistance, which I stād in need of now, for that my endlesse trauel craue some ease: for my luckelesse stars haue allotted me such aduersities, as would soone cut off the wretched liues of many: but neither death, nor ought else will be so fauourably as to ridde me from further calamities, but I am still plunged into their intricate labyrinth: for know most courteous Ladie, that my selfe of late was promoted to all felicitie, but now am contrarily plunged in all distresse, and that this habit I haue onely put on, to shrowd my selfe from many perils that I was formerly subiect vnto. For I am an vnfortunate Ladie as you are, by extreame misfortunes driuen from my dignitie, friendes and acquaintance, and forced both by want and wearinesse to seeke refuge in this place, where by your kindnesse I am well refresht: neither will I conceale any of my misfortunes from your knowledge. Then *Violetta* repeated the whole trueth, as she had done before to the olde man in his Cell, which when *Clarina* heard, with teares she did partake her sorrow: and taking her by the hand, desired her to hold her excused, for not vsing that behauiour towards her, which her estate deserued, promising with willingnesse, to further her safe conduct into *Bohemia*, which she knew her brother *Panuamus* at her intreatie would vndertake. In this and such like communication they spent their sad time, vntil *Panuamus* returne, who shortly came without hope of redeeming the Ladie *Madera* his mother.

Clarina assone as he was come, declared to him all that she could of *Violetta*'s estate, and what she was: amongst the rest, she tolde him that she was espoused to a Knight named *Pollipus*. *Panuamus* hearing her name *Pollipus*, called to remembrance the speeches he had with a Knight that he met that day, and assuredly thought this was the Ladie he went in search of. Now the knight he had met was *Tellamor*, who entring into communication with him, enquired if he could tell any newes of a Lady that was vnfortunately lost in *Bohemia*, relating the very same circumstance that *Clarina* tolde him, *Violetta* had before declared vnto her) withall, *Tellamor* demaunded if he had not

met a Knight, bearing this deuise in his shield: *A Knight pursuing a Beare*. Now it fell so out, that *Pannamus* beheld the notable combat that *Pollipus* fought with *Brandamor*, and remembring his deuise, knew him to be the same knight *Tellamor* inquired after, to whom he declared all that hee knewe, concerning the battell with *Brandamor*, and how treacherously he was surprised and imprisoned.

Tellamor hearing that *Pollipus* was imprisoned in the Forrest of *Arae*, departed thither-wardes, and *Pannamus* came to his Castle, where at his comming, he found *Violetta*, in simple array, and hearing his sisters speeches, waying each circumstance, found that she was the very Ladie that the knight inquired after, and that the knight that fought so valiantly with *Brandamor*, and was by him imprisoned, was her husband.

Pannamus having gathered this intelligence of *Violettas* misfortunes, and remembring the noble valour of *Pollipus*, was touched with an affectionate pittie of her distresse, and what furthered by his owne inclination and *Clarinas* intreatie, resolued to vse his vttermost indeuours to worke her comfort: and comming to *Violetta*, declared the whole circumstance of all that he had heard of *Tellamor*, and of *Pollipus*, in the Castle of *Brandamor*.

Violetta hearing of a certaintie that *Pollipus* was yet liuing, and not dead, as she before that suspected, (for though she perceiued the contrary before in *Archas* Castle, yet a scruple remaining in her minde thereof) was somewhat comforted, and in some better hope to come to him againe: but calling to minde the daunger hee was now in, was exceedingly againe ouerwhelmed with care of his welfare: and hearing of his imprisonment, determined to endanger her owne libertie to enioy his company, if other meanes could not be wrought for his release. *Pannamus* seeing her ouerwhelmed with such a chaos of cõfused cares, said as followeth. Most vertuous Ladie, since Fortune hath brought you into this place, & that you haue thus happily heard of your knight *Pollipus*, release your selfe from the bonds of those cares, which disturbe your quiet: for here you shall want nothing that accordeth to your will: and my selfe will do the best I can to set *Pollipus* at libertie, which whileſt I goe about, to pleaseth you, my sister *Clarina* shall keep you company, whose griefes are as great as may be.

Sir (quoth *Violetta*) might I obtaine this fauour at your handes, that you would giue the knight you met, knowledge of my being

here.

here, then I am sure hée will soone come to me, with whom I would gladly speake, for I know he is one of the knights of *Bohemia*.

That will I do (quoth *Pannamus*) or any thing else you shall commaund me: and because I will not be disappointed of mæting him, I wil early in the morning follow him, for that he is gone to the forrest of *Arde*, where I shall be sure to finde him. Early the nert morning, according to his word, he mounted himselfe, and departed after *Tellamor*, leauing *Clarina* and *Violetta* togither, vsing the best perswasions they could to comfort one another.

CHAP IX.

How Pannamus met with Tellamor, and how hee and Tellamor met Barzillus at the Golden Tower: and returning altogither to Pannamus Castle, Tellamor was enamoured of Clarina.

Pannamus hauing left *Violetta* and *Clarina* togither, with all speede hasted to finde *Tellamor*, and riding an vnwonted pace, hee ouertooke him entring into the Forrest, vnto whom hee saide. Sir Knight, let me bee so bold as to aske you one question: *Tellamor* hearing his words, and knowing him to be the same knight he had met withall before, courteously bad him aske what he pleased. Are you not a knight of *Bohemia* (quoth he?) *Tellamor* marueling why he askt him that question, tolde him that he was indeede belonging to *Parismus* Prince of *Bohemia*. Then said *Pannamus*, a Ladie that remaineth not far hence, named *Violetta*, hath sent me backe vnto you, and desireth to speake with you. *Tellamor* hearing his words, was affected with exceeding ioy thereat, making this reply. Sir Knight, in a happie houre did I mæte with you, by your meanes to come to knowledge of their abode I most desire to finde: indeede *Violetta* is the Lady I goe in search of, and also wise to the knight you tolde me of yesterday, who by your report remaineth prisoner in the Forrest: therefore I will returne with you to visite that Ladie, to whose service my life is wholly dedicated. This saide, they returned backe togither, but the night being approched, & they without any place to lodge in, thought it as good to trauell all night, as take vp their lodging on the colde ground: therefore *Pannamus* vndertooke to guide them, trusting to his owne knowledge, contrary to his expectation, wandred a quite contrarie way:

and when *Phœbus* beganne to illuminate the earth with his golden brightnesse, they were come into a pleasant valley, where they beheld two Knights continuing a most fierce combat, and drawing neare vnto them, *Tellamor* presently knewe the one of them to be *Barzillus*, the occasion of which combat was thus.

After *Barzillus* had parted from *Barzillus*, and *Tellamor* taking the middle way, he wandred many daies without any aduenture, and at last arriued at a most goodly Pallace, most exceedingly beautified with innumerable Turrets of exceeding heigth, that their toppes seemed to equall the cloudes, of such curious workemanshippe, as the like hath not bin seen, whose glistring reflection procured by the sunnes bright beames, dazeled the sight of the beholders: with an admirable glittering. In the mids of this stately Pallace, stoode a gallant building in forme of a Temple, seeming to the view of such as beheld the same, to be made of the most purest and burnisht gold, on the toppe whereof, stoode the forme of a most goodly Lady, with a Crowne of gold vpon her head, whose liuely proportion & forme of exceeding beautie, would haue detained a most constant mind, in a wandring delight to beholde the same. *Barzillus* beholding the exceeding beautie of the Pallace, and the stately forme of the pictured Lady was desirous to know who inhabited there, and to that intent drawing nigh thereto, at the entrance thereof, he beheld a tent, with these verses written thereon.

Passe not this Bridge before thou knocke,
Least thou too late repent thy pride:
Leaue not obtained, thou mayst goe backe,
For entrance is to all denide.

A Knight within must knowe thy name,
Thy boldnesse else will turne to shame,

Barzillus reading the superscription, smote the Tent with his launce, when presently issued out a knight, in euery poynt readie armed, to whome *Barzillus* saide as followeth. Knight, I reading the superscription ouer the entrance into the Tent, according to the direction thereof haue called thee forth, demanding thy meaning thereby, and what goodly Pallace this is, the like whereof, I neuer beheld for beautie? Knight (aunswered hee againe) this Pallace is called the

Golden

Golden Tower, belonging to *Maximus*, the most mightie and famous king of *Natolia*, wherein is his onely daughter *Angelica*, for beautie without compare: for wit, forme, and vertuous ornaments, excelling all the Ladies in the world: whose equall was neuer heard of, nor can be found within the spatious continent of the earth. The King hath placed her in his most rich and gorgeous Pallace, whose walles are of Brasse, and framed of such inuincible strength, that no power of man is able to subdue the same: she hath to attend her a hundreth Ladies of great dignitie, and a thousand of the most valiant Knights in all the world. The occasion why he guardeth her person is this: At her birth, an old Inchauntresse prophecied, that her beautie should set kings at discord, and be the cause of her fathers death.

A childe is borne, whose beautie bright,
Shall passe each forme of other faire:
As doth the Sunne in perfect light,
Each little starre sixt in the ayre.
For whom great Kings shall enter strife,
And warre shall shed Natolians *blood:*
Whose Ire shall spill Maximus *life,*
Yet wisdome oft hath harme withstood.
A mightie Prince her loue shall gaine,
Though vaine do seeke to crosse their blisse.
He shall her winne with restlesse paines,
And she of sorrowe shall not misse.
Much barbrous blood reuenge shall spill,
And all of warre shall haue their fill:
All this shall happen by degree,
Before this child shall weaded bee.

And because hée will match her according to her dignitie, hée hath likewise made a vowe, that none but the greatest Potentate in the world shall be her husband. Which said, the knight went into this Tent, and brought out a most gallant picture: this (quoth he) is the Ladies forme, wherein the Artisman hath shewed some prettie skill, but so farre is this picture vncomfortable to the perfect description of her celestiall perfections, and as farre different in delicacie, as is blacke from white, or beautie from deformitie. Whose view would change the affections of

the truest knight living, from his former constant resolue, to adore her beautie, and forsake his former vowes, onely to attend her person, for so diuine are her liniaments, and so rare her perfections, that her fame is euen spred through all the regions of the world. *Barzillus* hearing him enter into a newe discourse of her beautie, and that in such affectionate sort, hauing before in his fancie said ynough, beganne to laugh at him, saying.

Knight, mee thinkest thou dotest, or else art madde, to enter into such commendation of this Ladies beautie, hauing peraduenture neuer seene other faire Ladie, or else for that thy selfe art affectionately deuoted to loue none but her: for I haue seene a Ladie that as farre exceedeth this picture, as thou reportest she doth all other: (which words *Barzillus* spake onely to see whether his valour and boastings were agreeable) wherewith the knight that kept the Tent was so vexed, that he vttered these speeches.

What ill nurtured creature art thou (quoth he) that deridest the beautie that is rather to be admired? hast thou no more maners, then to make so litle estimation of that which all the world adores: thou shalt dearely abide this discourtesie: with that hee mounted himselfe, and charged a speare at *Barzillus*, who answered him with such courage, that at two courses he ouerthrew him from his horse. By which time a number of knights were vpon the bartlements viewing their combat, and seeing the knight that kept the Tent foyled, burst into an exceeding laughter, and so departed.

Barzillus hauing foyled the knight, for that the night drewe nigh, withdrew himself from the Golden Tower into a pleasant valley, and there staied that night. The knight that kept the Tent was belonging to the King of *Candie*, who came with perswasion to win *Angelica* loue with his prowesse, and with much adoe had obtained leaue of the Gardians to keepe the passage, but hee not contented with his foyle, intending to reuenge his disgrace, followed him to the valley, where *Tellamor* found them combatting, as is aforesaide: who knowing *Barzillus*, stepping betwixt them, parted the fray. *Barzillus* likewise knowing *Tellamor*, with great kindnesse embraced him, and vpon his request declared the cause of their combat. *Tellamor* then speaking to the knight of the Tent, gaue him this farewel. Knight, returne to your charge, for your combat here is at an ende, for busines

of

which I haue yelded into your handes, and when you are amongſt your friendes in *Bohemia*, be not vnmindfull of poore *Clarinas* loue, who hath committed her life, honour and chaſtitie, into your gentle cuſtodie.

Moſt deare *Clarina* (quoth *Tellamor*) my returne ſhall be as ſpeedie as may be, for like as you, my ſelf ſhall neuer enioy one minutes reſpite of content, without your heauenly company, wherein my cheefeſt felicitie dependeth: and as you haue yelded all that I can deſire, ſo you grant, into my vnworthy keeping, I will as carefully labour to preſerue the ſame from all ſpot of diſhonour, hoping at my returne, to enioy the poſſeſſion of your loue, as well by generall conſent of your friendes, as by your courteſie I haue attained their diuine fruition in priuate. Then I beſeech you, let no diſquiet diſturbe your peace, let no doubt trouble your fancie, nor any ſuſpence of my loyaltie take roote in your heart: for ſooner ſhall the Sea become drie land, the Sonne and Moone loſe their cleare light, and all things turne to their contrary, before *Tellamor* will any way falſifie his faith. In theſe and ſuch like ſpeeches (entermingled with many delights) they ſpent that night, taking their leaue each of other, with many a ceremonious farewell, and parting with many a heauy ſigh and ſad teare, thinking that with each others ſight, each others life had parted. *Tellamor* according to his promiſe, arriued in *Libia*, euen at the time of *Pariſmus* departure, whome we will leaue onwardes of his iourney towardes *Bohemia*.

The Knight of *Fame* hauing ſlept his fill, and longer a great deale then he determined, awaked within two daies after *Pariſmus* departure, little thinking the Prince had beene gone but beginning to arme himſelfe, *Flauia* comming to him, ſaid as followeth. Worthie Knight (quoth ſhe) I am glad to ſee that you are well, which vntill now I doubted. The Knight of *Fame* wondring at her ſpeeches, ſaide: Gentlewoman, as yet I haue not beene ſicke, then why do you make any queſtion of my health? Indeed ſir (quoth ſhe) I ſee now you haue not beene ſicke, but you haue ſlept very long, for I haue beene your keeper heere this two dayes, euer ſince the Prince of *Bohemia* departed, who thought to haue had your company ſome part of the way, but ſeeing your ſleepe (from which you could not be wakened) hee imparted his minde to the Ladie *Venola*, who hath giuen me eſpeciall charge to attend you diligently.

hée hearing her ſpeeches, was amazed in his thoughts to thinke of them, entring into many cogitations what ſhould be the cauſe of his ſickneſſe, which hée perceiued was the potion which hée had taſted, that he was exceedingly inraged with himſelfe, that he thereby was diſappointed of *Pariſmus* company, whom hée eſteemed aboue all the knights that euer he had met withall, and making a vertue of neceſſitie, blaming himſelfe for his ſickneſſe, he went backe into the company of other knights, making the beſt excuſe he could thereof. *Flauia* in the meane time went to *Venola*, and tolde her all that had happened: and what ſhe had told him of *Pariſmus* departure: wiſhing her to deuiſe what ſhe thought beſt to ſatiſfie his minde. The knight of *Fame* being deſirous to know what meſſage *Pariſmus* had left with *Venola*, meeting with *Flauia*, deſired her to certifie her Miſtreſſe that he attended her pleaſure, to know what the Prince of *Bohemia* had tolde her as concerning him.

Flauia hearing his ſpeeches, brought him into a gallerie, where ſhe deſired him to ſtay, and ſhe would go bring him anſwere preſently: ſo comming to *Venola*, ſhe tolde her thereof. *Venola* then hauing ridde her chamber of all company, willed her to bring him in, whom ſhe welcommed with vnwonted kindneſſe: and taking him by the hand, deſired him to ſit downe by her vppon the beddes ſide, to whom ſhée ſaid, as followeth.

Moſt courteous knight, the Prince of *Bohemia* willed me to certifie you, that he would within foure daies returne to this place, to deſire your company in executing a ſecret of importance: deſiring me, that I would intreate you to ſtay here ſome fewe daies, and at his returne hée will requite that kindneſſe: therefore I pray (quoth ſhée) bée my gueſt for ſo long time, for I haue receiued ſuch benefits by your courteſie, as I would willingly (if it lay in my power) requite the ſame. I thanke your excellencie (quoth hée) for proffering mée ſuch kindneſſe, acknowledging my ſelfe both vnworthie thereof, and vnable to requite the ſame: being ſo much the more willing to ſtay *Pariſmus* returne, thereby to ſhewe my dutie to your requeſt: and ſéeing you vouchſafe mée to bée your Gueſt, hauing yet deſerued no ſuche kindneſſe, pleaſeth you to commaunde or imploy mée any way, and I will moſt willingly vndertake any trauell to procure your content: which wordes hée ſpake, little knowing

ing what paſſions had poſſeſt her heart, whome ſhee vſed ſo kindely, and entertained with ſuch louing glaunces, that ſhe beganne greatlie to commende her courteſie: and marualled why ſhee vſed him with ſuch kindeneſſe, that would haue pearced the heart of any other Knight but onelie himſelfe, whoſe affections were ſetteled on his inward deuoted Ladie: that *Venolaes* loue was but beſtowed in vaine, and ſhee ſpent her ſighes and her good will in a barraine ſoile, where ſhee wept in hope of recompence: which drane her to ſuch extreamitie of griefe, that ſhee was often in minde (hauing him ſo fitlely in her companie, and fearing to loſe ſo ſweete opportunitie) to reueale her loue to him of her ſelfe, but that purpoſe was ſuddainely altered by contrary thoughts, that ſhee ſatte rackt with ſo manie and ſo extreame cogitations, that the griefe on the one ſide, that ſhee could not conceyue of her good liking, by ſo manie euident tokens as ſhee hadde ſhewen thereof, and her owne paſſions ouerwhelmed her heart with ſuch care, that ſhee ſuddainly burſt into abounda nce of teares, and ſo roſe from the bedde and went to a window.

The Knight of *Fame* marualling what ſhould bee the cauſe of her ſaddeneſſe, thinking that his companie could but diſquiet her, departed her chamber, which ſhee perceiuing, was ouercome with ſuch paſſion, that ſhee fell downe dead: wherewith *Flauia* gaue ſuch ſhrieks, that the knight of *Fame* hearing her outcrie, ſuddainely returned, and finding *Venola* in that eſtate, did the beſt hee could with the Nurſe to recouer her ſences: which at laſt beganne to turne to their wonted vſes.

Venola lifting vp her eyes, and eſpying the knight of *Fame* holding her in his armes, wicht that ſhee might for euer haue continued in that trance, who carrying her to the bedde, there laid her downe, and *Flauia* and other Damzelles by that time tooke her into their cuſtodie: which cauſed him to depart againe: after whome *Venola* caſt ſuch a greedie looke, accompanied with ſuch ſcalding ſighes, that *Flauia* feared ſhee would haue fallen into the like trance againe. After that ſhee was well recouered, and all her attendants departed, *Flauia* ſaide as followeth. Why deare Miſtreſſe (quoth ſhee) how immoderately doe you gouern your ſelfe, to fall into theſe extreames? I beſhrew my heart, if I doe not repent that euer I vndertooke to bee an actor herein. What,

haſt you no more wiſedome, but ſo fondly to deale on a ſtragling knight, that cannot, or at the leaſt will not underſtand your meaning, taking a delight to ſee your torment, for it is impoſſible but that hee ſhould perceiue your loue towards him: then be not ſo affectionate towards ſuch a one, as neither regardeth loue nor knoweth what belongeth to courtly ciuilitie. Peace, peace, (quoth *Venola*) either fill my eares with the ſound of better words, or elſe hold thy tongue: for I tell thee, it is more odious vnto me then death, to heare thee ſo much diſgrace the Prince of courteſie: for in him remaine all honourable parts, whoſe preſence is more pleaſant vnto me, then all the proffered ſeruices of the knights in the world: and if thou canſt comfort me no better then by theſe ſpeeches keepe ſecret what thou knoweſt, and hereafter thou ſhalt know no more of my minde.

For I imparted the ſame to thee, thinking to haue comfort by thy counſell, but thou contrarily, adioſt care to my griefe. Sweet Miſtreſſe (quoth ſhee) I beſeech you do not conceiue ſo hardly of my meaning, for I ſpeake nothing but with intent to procure your good: and rather will I teare my accurſed tongue from forth of my head, then it ſhall hereafter vtter a word to diſpleaſe you. Then (quoth *Venola*) once againe counſell me what to do, for thou ſeeſt how farre I am tied in the bonds of loue to that worthie knight, that without ſome hope of comfort, my cares will bee exceeding, and more then my poore heart will be able to indure. This I thinke (quoth *Flauia*) is the beſt to be done, either do it your ſelfe, or let me giue him knowledge of your loue, and then you ſhall ſone ſee whether hee will accept thereof or no. Do ſo then quoth *Venola*) I commit all to thy diſcretion.

The knight of *Fame* being departed to *Venolas* chamber, was as farre from conceiuing the cauſe of her paſſion, as he was from the knowledge of all things, and being walkt into a Garden alone by himſelfe, *Flauia* came to him, whom he kindly greeted, aſking her how her Miſtreſſe did.

Sir knight (quoth ſhee) in the ſame caſe you left her, and rather worſe, the cauſe of whoſe diſquiet is procured by no diſeaſe, but by an erre ordinarie occaſion, which none but one can remedie, which I would willingly giue the partie knowledge of, but that I know not whether he will take the ſame kindly or no: Elſe were he much to blame (quoth he) for hard were his heart, that would not pittie the diſtreſſe of

ſo

so diuine a creature. Gentle sir (quoth she) thus it is. My Lady hath euer since the first sight of your person, beene greatly tormented with loues passions, which is the cause of her sickenesse, which resteth onely in your power to salue.

The knight of *Fame* hearing her speeches, was so suddainly astonished, and therewith drawne into such cogitations, that he stood a good while like one in a trance, at last he said. The harder is her happe, and the worse my misfortune, for I am vnworthy of such kindnesse, and vnable to yeeld her recompence: which words being spoken, he turned himselfe from her, being drawne into such a deepe meditation, that hee regarded not, nor scarce heard some words *Flauia* spake to him afterwards, who thinking that he had of purpose contemned her, departed in a monstrous rage: and being alone by himselfe, cogitating vpon these euents, perceiued that her former kindnesse had proceeded from the same roote of affection, greatly condemning himselfe of vnkindnesse, that could not before that perceiue the same: wishing that he had departed with the Prince of *Bohemia*, for that his fancie could by no meanes be drawne to the least good conceit of her loue: for his heart was wholly imployed an other way.

Then he beganne to call to remembrance the somniferous potion he had tasted, by which meanes he was disappointed of *Parismus* company, reuoluing euery consideration and circumstance of the same and these euents, was in the ende fully perswaded, that it was purposely done by *Venola*, or some by her appointment, to stay him there: which thought was so fully grounded in his fancie, that he assuredly perswaded himselfe that was the very truth, and none else: which drane him into many studies how to rid himselfe from thence, at last he determined to depart in secret and vnknowne to any. And with this resolution, all that day he accompanied the rest of the knights, thereby to shun all occasions of hearing any further speech of *Venola*. Who hearing how sorrowfully hee had received *Flauias* message, (which *Flauia* had told her) entred into such extream complaints against her hard fortune and shed such abundance of teares, that the bed whereon shee lay was watered therewith: in which estate she continued tormenting her selfe with extreame cares.

Early the next morning, the knight without the knowledge of any departed, clogged with such a chaos of confused cares, as that he wisht

the date of his wearie life (ſubiect to ſo many croſſes) were expired, intending neuer to returne thither, whom *Flauia* ſone miſt: the newes whereof, ſhe conueyed to the hearing of *Venola*, who toke the ſame ſo heauily, that many dayes ſhe continued as one likelier to entertaine death, then to ſurmiue: which drane her Parents into an extreame ſadneſſe, from whom ſhe ſtill concealed the cauſe of her griefe. In which eſtate for a while we will leaue her, and the knight of *Fame* onwards on his iourney, and *Clarina* in great care for the abſence of *Tellamor*, in the ſayreſt of *Arde*.

CHAP. XV.

How the Knight of Fame *arriued in* Natolia: *and by what meanes hee found the Lady hee ſawe in the viſion: and the combat hee fought with* Collimus.

AFter the knight of *Fame* was departed the king of *Libias* Court, to auoyde the loue of *Venola*, hee trauelled many dayes without any aduenture, tired with extreame care and deſire to come to the knowledge of his Parents, and to finde his deuoted Lady, that when the Sunne was at the higheſt, and by that meanes the ſeaſon very hotte, hee alighted from his horſe in a pleaſant valley, where ſitting vnder the ſhadowe of a Cheſt-nut-tree, hee entered into this communication to himſelfe. What croſſes ſtill proſecute my ſteppes, that I can in no place bee at quiet, but am ſtill troubled with that which I would not, but cannot finde the thing I deſire? My birth day was the beginning of my ſorrowes: ſince which time, nothing but care hath fallen to my ſhare, whereas I ſee other knightes enioye their hearts content. My Parents hidden from my knowledge, my ſelfe trauelling to finde them, peraduenture goe rather a great way from them, then to them: for the Iland of Rockes, from whence I came, and where I was brought vppe, is farre diſtant from this place: and I thinke if I woulde come to their knowledge,

ledge, it is my best course to returne thither againe. Alas I not ouer-foolish to refuse the marriage of *Phylena*, the Kings daughter of *Thrace*, vpon vaine confidence of a dreame? vpon whose certaintie I can no way builde, which might be procured by some Sorcerie of *Romulus*, to make me refuse that honour, to the intent he might install himselfe therein, and cause mée to doate on the beautie of a Lady that is no where to be found: for the whole world containes not such an essence of perfect beautie, as that which I beheld? Then what shall I do: or which way shall I shape my best course? shall I giue ouer her search, since dreames are so vncertaine? but this was more then a dreame, it was a Vision: for I beheld the Goddesse *Venus*, who enioyned mée this taske, holding that sweete Lady in her hand: whose forme so perfectly is printed in my remembrance, that I cannot forget the same: which assuredly is liuing and to bee founde: and therefore I will neuer desist till I haue founde her, though I spende the whole race of my life in that quest: which if it were ordained for my endlesse torment, then how should I auoyde the same? neither care I what paine to endure, if I may after all my trauels finde her.

In this sort he spent much time, vntill he fell in a deepe studie, leaning his backe to a Tree, hee fell fast a sleepe. Whilest hee was in this sweete sleepe, (by happie fortune) *Angelica* the faire, that day hadde forsaken the Golden Tower, (which was not farre from the place where the Knight of *Fame* lai) to meete the King her father, who with the Queen was comming from the Citie of *Ephesus*, where he kept his Court, to sojourne certaine daies for his disport in the Golden Tower, that yeelded all kinde of delights. *Angelica* passing along this pleasant valley, gallantly attended by an vnwonted traine of Ladies and guarde of Knights, espied the Knight of *Fame*, supposing that hee had beene dead: to ease which doubt, shee willed one of her Knights to see what he was. The Knight comming to him, awaked him, who suddainly starting vp, beganne to laye hand on his sword, but casting his eye aside, hee beheld *Angelicas* gallant traine, and amongest the rest, her selfe, whose countenance hee presently knewe to bee the very same Ladie hee had seene in the Vision: whose beautie and suddaine presence stroke such an amazement to his

senses,

sences, that he stood like one in a trance. *Angelica* seing that hée was liue, and not dead as she supposed, past on her intended iourney, not regarding him. He seing her departed, thus said to the knight. Courteous sir, I pray it me craue that gallant Ladies name. Sir (replied he) her name is *Angelica*, daughter to the most mighty king of *Nasona*, who passing this way to méete the king and Quéene, (who are comming towards the Golden Tower) and séeing you lye vnder this tree, sent me to see whether you were liue or dead: which said, hée departed.

The knight of *Fame* reioycing that he had séene his long expected Mistresse, was presently rapt into a heauenly conceit of ioy, that her thought himselfe as it were transformed into pleasure, such comfort remoued his drooping heart from sad dumpes, with her delectable sight, euen then beginning to studie how to come to her speech, to purchase occasion to giue her knowledge of his dutie, finding so many lettes and impossibilities betwéen him and his intent, that he beganne to dispaire thereof: at last resolued vppon nothing, but determining to doo something, he mounted his stéed, and followed that way *Angelica* went: purposing to take a more precious view of her perfections, being hopelesse of any other comfort.

He had some ouertaken her traine, not yet resolued by reason of his strangenesse, what to do, nor what meanes to vse to speake to her, being incompassed by such a number of knights: at last he thus thought with himselfe: I that haue refused the good will of kings daughters, onely to finde this beautifull Ladie, and in her search haue indured so many mischances, shall I now when I sée her, be afraid to speake to her? or may I not hereafter be disappointed of such fortunate occasion as is now offered mee? What though shée bee guarded by these knights, being alone, it can no way breede offence to them, that I speake to her. With this resolution he passed by the hindermost of her company, without speaking to them, who greatly marueiled what he should be, and comming right against *Angelica*, who he easily knewe from the rest, by his former little view of her forme in the vision, he kindly drew neare her, and with a submisse signe of reuerence first giuen, he said as followeth.

Most sacred Lady, pardon my boldnesse, which I beséech you do not account rudenesse: I haue trauelled many a myle, to attain the heigth

of

of this felicitie, to behold your diuine perfections, which maketh me contrary to that dutifull reuerence my heart hath vowed to intrude my selfe thus rudely into your presence, being vnable of other meanes to demonstrate my depth of deuotion: therefore I humbly once againe desire your pardon, that haue offended against my will: desiring you withall, to enter into this opinion of my meaning, that (notwithstanding what perswasion my rudenesse may breed in your heauenly part) it is both loyall, honourable and vertuous, and no more intending to presume aboue my desert, yet my life shall be alwaies imployed to deserue as well as the best.

Angelica hearing his speeches, sadly noting his countenance, and being of a most singular wit, admired his courage, that notwithstanding all her guard, he durst so boldly presume into her presence, which caused her the better to regard both his speeches and proposition, made this reply. Sir Knight, it may be you are deceiued, for you haue not found that which you haue so long sought, which maketh me account your speech flatteries, and your boldnesse folly: entring into no other conceit of your meaning, for be it either good or bad, I care not, for the one cannot harme me, nor the other pleasure me: but for your good will, I take that kindly, though in my fancie you proffesse more then you will performe.

Diuine Lady (quoth he) vouchsafe but to imploy me, and then shall you make triall of my forwardnesse, which shall be no lesse then I haue promised: for my speech nor bolde approach into your presence, hath not proceeded from want of respect of your worthinesse, but from a strickt commaund, long since enioyned me to become your dutifull seruant: therefore I humbly beseech you, iudge fauorably of my meaning, for I will rather hereafter consume my heart with silent care, then by my speech purchase your displeasure, if you commaund the contrary. He had not scarce ended those words, but she let fall her glouc which he seeing, presently alighted and tooke it vp, with reuerence kissing the same, offered it her againe.

Knight (quoth she) take it for your labour, wherewith she turned away from him, for that she espied her Father comming: which caused him, being glad of that fauour, to withdraw himselfe. One of *Angelicas* knights named *Camillus*, to whose principall custodie the king had committed his daughter, aboue all the rest noted the knight of *Fames* behauiour, and disdaining that a straunger should carrie away the

gloue, which he eſtéemed a fauor far beyond his deſert, himſelfe hauing beene her ſeruant a long time, yet could neuer attaine any ſuch kindnes: withall, ſuppoſing he was ſome knight *Angelica* knewe, preſently haſted after him, truſting too much to his owne valour, and bluntly badde him render backe the Princeſſe gloue. Sir (quoth he) againe, the Princeſſe gaue it me, and for her ſake I will kepe the ſame. Wherewith *Collimus* without any more words, retired backe to encounter him: and he did the like, and remembring it was the beſt deed of chiualrie he could performe in his Ladies preſence, thought with himſelfe, that if he ſate not faſt, he would quaile his courage: preſently, they met each other, the one with braueric, the other with force, for *Collimus* meaſured his length on the ground.

By this time the King and Queene had met *Angelica*, and all greetings ouerpaſt, their traines met which almoſt filled that pleaſant valley: in compaine of *Maximus*, was *Camillus*, ſonne to the king of *Slauonia*, attended by a number of gallant Knights, who hearing of the exceeding beautie of *Angelica*, was lately come into the countrie as a ſuter, to whom *Maximus* ſaide, (beholding the braue courſe betweene the two Knightes,) What Knight is yonder, that hath ouerthrowne his aduerſarie with ſuch agilitie? A comely Knight he is (quoth *Camillus*) but it ſéemes he is a ſtraunger. With that, another knight of *Angelicas* attendants, vpon the former quarrell, incountred the knight of *Fame*, who taſted of his valour, as his predeceſſor *Collimus* had done, and after him another, which when *Maximus* beheld, he called a Gentleman to him, willing him to requeſt the ſtraunge knight to come and ſpeake with him, which fell out well for the knight of *Fames* quiet, for had not the king béen preſent, the knights of *Angelicas* guard had taken ſuch a ſecret indignation againſt him, that they by violence would haue ſought his death. The meſſenger *Maximus* ſent, told the knight of *Fame* that the king did requeſt to ſpeake with him. Sir quoth he) I am readie at his commaund: to whom *Maximus* ſaid as followeth.

Sir knight, you are it ſéemeth to me, a ſtranger in this place, but notwithſtanding ſomewhat bolde with my knightes, both whoſe quarrell againſt you, and your cauſe of arriuall, I deſire to know. Moſt renowmed king quoth he) I am a ſtraunger in this place, or in any elſe: in my trauels meeting with this gallant troupe, to any of whom

I haue

I haue as yet giuen no cause of offence, which should make them trouble mee. Sir (quoth *Maximus*) they haue reapt shame for their discontent: but I pray let vs without offence know your name, & of whence you are: neither feare to disarme your selfe: for vpon my promise, you shall haue no wrong offered you: which said, the knight of *Fame* pulled off his helmet, making this answere. By name most noble king, I am called the Knight of *Fame*, my byrth to my selfe vnknowne, by no ill intent drawne into this countrey, but onely to finde out my Parents, which are likewise vnknowne: my selfe subiect to miserie, by the want of knowledge of my selfe. *Marcellus* sonne to *Maximus*, a knight of exceeding courteous and honourable parts, hearing his speeches, humbling himselfe vppon his knee before his Father, said. I humbly craue your Maiesties fauour, to entertaine this knight honourably, for that I haue some knowledge of him, which I will declare to your Highnesse hereafter.

Maximus hearing his sonnes speeches, said: Rise vp *Marcellus*, for thy sake, and for his owne too, hee shalbe welcome: whom do thou vse according as shall seeme good, and bee agreable to his honourable deserts. The Knight of *Fame* hearing his speeches, moste humblie thanked him: and *Marcellus* presently embraced him, shewing many tokens of hartie good will.

Angelica all this while noted euery circumstance of this knights arriuall, as first how she found him a sleepe: and next, of his speeches to her: then how veliantly he had onerthrowne three knights: then her brothers speeches: and lastly, his gallant yotuh, and comely person: which altogether wrought such a kinde of admyration in her, that shee beganne with a curious eye to marke all his actions: and to affect his companie, more then shee had done any mannes: oftentimes casting a looke vpon him, shee perceiued his eye was stil vpon her: which made a ruddie blush beautifie her cheekes. In which time, the king intreated him to stay sometime with him, if his important businesse did not withdrawe him: which offer he willingly and kindly accepted: which fell out according to his owne hearts content.

The second part

CHAP. XVI.

How the Knight of Fame *was entertained at the Golden Tower, and what speeches past betwixt* Anna *and* Angelica.

AFter these speeches past, the King, *Camillus*, the Queene, *Angelica*, and all the rest, departed towards the Golden Tower: and by the way, *Marcelius* begante to declare in hearing of them all, what her had heard of the Knight of *Fame*: of his valiant exploits in *Thrace*, and afterwardes how in the Forrest of *Arde* hee slewe the Gyant *Brandamor*, which hee vttered in such ample manner, and with such commendations, that it made them all admyre his noble gifts: especially *Angelica* aboue all the rest, noted euery circumstance thereof, with such regarde, that shee seemed to take great delight therein. The Knight of *Fame* hearing therof, entertaining his Mistresse perfections with such pleasure, and admyring her beautie with such surfetting delight, that hee rode like one in a traunce, hauing all his senses bent vppon her.

By this time they were commen to the Golden Tower where was exceeding preparation made for the King, who speaking to *Camillus* and the Knight of *Fame*, tolde them they were most hartilie welcome thither: likewise the Queene welcommed them with great kindenesse, especiallie *Marcellius* care for the Knight of *Fames* entertainement was verie great, who caused him to bee lodged in a moste stately lodging, where euerie thing was readily prepared for him in the best manner. Euerie one being departed to their severall lodgings, the knight of *Fame* meditating on his good fortune, and the kinde entertainement hee found in that straunge place, waying on the one side, howe late hee was plunged in care, and howe suddainely hee was possest with pleasure, howe from miserie, hee was aduaunced to the highest degree of his felicitie: howe hee was late in dispaire of finding his demoted, and howe prosperously hee had nowe matte with her, and had in some part manifested his affection: how the occasion of his quarrell for his Ladies Sleeue, was the meanes of his kinde entertainement: how fortunately in that straunge

place

place his deeds were extolde : and how kindly *Marcellus* vied him, whose acquaintance and friendship might be a meanes both of his stay in that place, and also of obtaining *Angelicas* loue. Then againe considering howe straunge it was that hee should stape in the verie place where his Lady should see him : and how luckily hee had left the Court of the king of *Lybia*, and thereby hee was rid from *Venolus* rash lone, which might both haue indaungered his honour and person : that with the remembrance of all these happy concurrences, his minde was exceedingly contented, & hee seemed to haue attained more happy successe then hee would haue wisht : that in that sumpath of sweete delight, accompanied with quiet stape, hee spent that night. *Angelica* was likewise no little inferiour to him in contrarietie of passions, but hauing likewise spent the day in companie of her mother when the time of rest drew nigh, shee some gat from out of all companie which shee thought troublesome, being much disquieted in her thoughts, feeling a kinde alteration to her former liberty of minde, being desirous to be alone, shee gat to her chamber : where was none but her Damzel *Anna*, that was her bed-fellow, to whom shee said ; I pray thee good *Anna* leaue me alone for a while, for my thoughts are possest with such disquiet, that I desire by solitarinesse to ease my passionate heart.

Anna hearing her speeches, meruelling what might be the cause therof, and being in all respects dutifull, departed. Shee was no sooner gone, but *Angelica* sitting downe vppon the rushes, leaning her head vppon the beddes side, beganne to studie whence the occasion of that saddaine alteration she felt in her selfe should proceede : sometimes deeming this, and then that, but still she could not certainly knowe what to iudge thereof : that her minde was ouerwone to an extreame torment, which so oppest her sences, that presently she called *Anna* again : who maruelling at her strange behauiour, & greeuing at her sadnesse, kneeling downe by her, vttered these speeches. My deare & sweete, I beseech you conceale not from me the occasion of your disquiet, to whose secrecie you neede not feare to commit the same : for I hope you are sufficiently perswaded of my truthe, that do esteeme my duety to you more deare then my selfe, which I would most willingly spende for your sake : or if you will vouchsafe to employe me any way, or in what sort so euer, so it please you to command, I will be most willing to vse my vttermost endeuours, as faithfully as euer did seruaunt, to purchase your content. Aye me wretched creature (quoth *Angelica*) it is not

mistresse of thy secretie, nor doubt of thy aide, nor ought else that I mai doubt in thee, that maie thy me withholde any part of my counsell from thee: for if I would shewe it thee, I cannot, for this passion is so newly begonne, that I cannot rightly coniecture what the cause thereof should be, or why my thoughts should be thus suddainly disquieted: and such assured confidence do I retaine in thy fidelitie, that I would conceale no part of my thoughts from thee.

Anna hearing her mistresse speeches, beganne presently to suspect that shee had entertained some good conceit of some of the knights that were arriued that day, whom she thought to be the young Prince (*Camillus*: which caused her make this answere. Deare Mistresse (quoth she) I beleeue the approach of some of the gallant knights that came with the King, is the cause of your alteration. Why (quoth *Angelica*) doest thou thinke their approach should disquiet me? Marry (quoth *Anna*) because many Ladies haue bene suddainly ouertaken with loue: wherewith *Angelica* blushte, saying. Doest thou thinke my affections so light, to loue of euery one I see?

Pardon mee deare Madame (quoth shee) I doe not thinke so. Wel (quoth *Angelica*) suppose thou hast iumpt vpon the right, which of those knights doest thou suppose it is? Wil you pardon me (said *Anna*) if I giue my opinion? I will (saide she.) I thinke (quoth *Anna*) it is the braue Prince *Camillus*. *Camillus* (quoth she) it is rather the stranger. Indeed (quoth *Anna*) that strange knight farre surmounteth all the knights that euer I beheld, for comlinesse, courtesie, and prowesse. I am assured said *Angelica* (breathing forth a sadde sigh) thou speakest this rather to flatter me, then according to that thou thinkest: for otherwise why didst thou speake of *Camillus*? Faith Mistresse (quoth she) I named *Camillus*, not for any thing I see in him comparable with the straunge knight, but for that I would thereby knowe your minde: which now that I vnderstand, if you would follow my counsell, you should not onely like him, but also loue him: for there is no doubt but the cause of his comming hither, was onely for your sake: who in my rash opinion, will proue both constant and loyall: for his braue countenance bewrayeth the vnited essence of true Nobilitie and Vertue to be placed in him.

O *Anna* (quoth she) thou woundest me to the heart: before I had but a suspition of loue, but by thy speeches I begin to be inthralled therein.

therein. Do not I pray thée séeke to augment that, which is impossible to come to perfection: which if I should entertaine (as I shall I feare me against my will) thou knowest how many impossibilities do threaten my euerlasting torment thereby: therefore I pray thee doe not once name him to me againe, for if thou doest, I shall be more inthralled to that very name, then to all the humble suites of the most noblest knights in the world.

Didst thou not heare my brother *Marcellus* report, how prodigally hee gaue away the kings daughter of *Thrace*? and what paines he tooke to redéeme *Venola*, that beautifull Lady, from *Andramarts* Castle?

I know thou didst: but likewise I know thou didst not heare what he said to me to refell these doubtes, that he was long since enioyned to my seruice, and was the thing hee had long time sought to attaine.

Didst thou not see how I found him a sléepe, and yet notwithstanding all the Knights that guarded me, how resolutely (yet with humilitie) he approached my presence? where he tolde me, that not want of regard had bredde that rudenesse, but feare of missing that fit occasion, considering how straightly I am kept and pried into by my Fathers decree?

Didst thou not see how brauely and valiantly hée ouerthrew thrée stout Knights together, that would haue taken my gloue from him? Doest thou not see how dearely my brother *Marcellus* loued him, and all in generall are well affected towards him? These I thinke are occasions sufficient to refell all suspect of his good intent and meaning.

Quoth *Anna* Truely most gracious Madame, I thinke verily (all things considered) hée hath not his equall, neyther for valour, nor for Vertue. You may doe as you please, whome I will not so much as once speake of hereafter, since I shall offende you thereby.

Yes, I pray thée speake of him (quoth *Angelica*) for nothing can please me better, though I feare me nothing will doe mee more harme. And well maist thou thinke me ouerfond, so soone to be intangled in the bondes of loue, with a strauenger, that I neither knewe of whence, nor what he is; of whome we haue saide ynough at this

time,

time, therefore I pray let vs deferre any further commendation of him, vntill we haue made better proofe of his worthinesse: which said, they betoke themselues to their rest.

Early the next morning the Knight of *Fame* was vp, to whom *Marcellus* was soone gotten, who tooke no other delight, but onely in his company, vsing him so kindly and so honourably, that the Knight of *Fame* marueiled thereat, wondring whence such kindnesse should grow: that he likewise beganne greatly to affect his company, and being both come into the Kings presence, who was accompanied by *Camillus*, they spent the forenoone in seuerall discourses: likewise *Angelica* spent her time amongst the Ladies of great account, in such sort as agreed in their fancie.

Dinner time being come, a most costly and sumptuous feast was prepared: whereunto *Maximus* inuited all his Nobles, and *Camillus* and the Knight of *Fame* amongst the rest as his chiefest, where they were most honourably entertained, sumptuously feasted, and kindly welcommed.

Camillus seeing that the Queene and *Angelica* were wanting, was suddainly fallen into a sadde dumps, because the Ladie of his delight was absent: which the King noted more specially then all the rest, who supposing that *Camillus* came as a Suter to his daughter, had of purpose giuen order to the Queene, that shee should banquet the Ladies by themselues: which was so done, that neither *Camillus* nor any else perceiued his drift therein, which made *Camillus* extreame angry with himselfe, that he had not the day before (when he enioyed both her sight and full libertie of speech) in some measure giuen her knowledge of his loue.

The Knight of *Fame* on the contrary side, gouerned himselfe with more moderation, for he hauing attained such good successe as his heart did wish, was therewith for the present contented: hoping that fortune that had beene so fauourable to him, would not suddainely alter her countenance, but still continue her aide to his furtherance: whom *Maximus* likewise diligently noted, hauing suspition that he likewise came for *Angelicas* loue, though hee dissembled the contrary, of which he could perceiue no likelihood by his merrie countenance, which caused him onely to suspect *Camillus*, and not him.

The Feast being ended with great royaltie, euery one after some Courtly pastime past, betooke themselues to what exercise liked them

best.

beſt. *Camillus* ſtill accompanied the King, ſhewing (for griefe of *Angelicaes* abſence, ſuch a kinde of behaviour, as though his ſences were bewitched with careleſſe paſſions, which he noted diligently, therby breeding in his minde, an aſſurance of his ſuſpition. The Knight of *Fame* had withdrawn himſelf into a Garden, and ſeeking the ſolitarieſt place he coulde finde, began to recall the ſweete remembrance of *Angelicaes* beautie into his minde, whereunto he was more firmely inthralled, then he was before he hat ſeene her, though euen then his loue was ſtrong, having but ſeene her in a Viſion, that he was now not onely contented with that fauour ſhe had already ſhewen him, but alſo deuiſed and ſtudied how to become more gracious in her ſight, and attaine ſome better hope of her loue, which as yet he had not likelihood to attaine. Whileſt he was in the depth of theſe cogitations, *Marcellus* miſſing him, and ſeeing him before enter into the garden, neuer left vntill he had found him out, to whom he ſaid. Syr Knight, I am ſomewhat bolde to interrupt your quiet meditations by my approach, being deſirous of your company: therefore if I may without intruſion accompany you, I will ſtay, otherwiſe I would be loth to breede your diſquiet.

Moſt noble *Marcellus* (quoth the Knight of *Fame*) I am not troubled with your preſence, but thinke my ſelfe moſt happy to enioy the ſame, as farre vnworthie ſuch kindneſſe: being a ſtraunger here, thinke my ſelfe ſo highly honoured by your fauour, that I ſhal account my ſelfe for euer bound vnto you for the ſame: thinking my ſelfe more happie thereby then I could haue wiſht, being before ſubiect to all euil fortune, account my ſelfe exceedingly fortunate by your kindneſſe and friendſhip.

I would it were in my power (quoth *Marcellus*) to deſerue ſo well of you: being more willinger then able to pleaſure you, for the report of your honourable gifts, hath made me long ſince deſirous of your acquaintance, that if you pleaſe to ſtay with me in my fathers Court, I will labour to ſhewe my good will towards you: and if you will accept of my plaine meaning, without further tryall, I will hereafter prooue your faithful friend. Moſt courteous Knight (quoth ſhe) I can yelde no other recompence but hartie thankes for your kindneſſe, which hath extended it ſelfe farre beyond my deſert, with ſo willing a heart accepting your kinde proffers, that before I prooue diſloyall, I will teare my heart from out my breſt. Then (quoth

(*Marcellus*) lette vs conclude this ſuddaine conſent of good will, which for my parte, ſhall never while life doth laſt bee diſſolued.

Deſiring you hence forwards to make ſuch account of mee, that wherein ſoeuer I may in any degree pleaſure you, I will as aſſuredly do my beſt, as in my power conſiſteth. With that they embraced each other: betwixt whom, ſuch good will began to grow, as was both conſtant and indiſſoluable.

CHAP. XVII.

How Angelica was impriſoned: and how Maximus rebuked his ſonne, for ſuffering the Knight of Fame to ſpeake to Angelica.

MArcellus hauing a while walked with him in the garden, deſired him to accompanie him into the Court to viſit the Ladies, who (quoth he) are this day feaſting by themſelues. The Knight of *Fame* glad thereof, willingly gaue his conſent, being the onely thing that contented his minde: and being come into the preſence where the Queene was, and hauing done his reuerence, ſhee moſt kindly welcommed the Knight of *Fame*, telling *Marcellus*, that his comming was to ſee the young Ladies: whereat *Marcellus* ſmiling, departed into a gallery, wher were a multitude of ſweet beauties, exerciſing themſelues at ſeuerall paſtimes, ſome at Cheſſe, ſome at Cardes, and ſome in pleaſant communication, whom *Marcellus* kindly embraced: but the Knight of *Fame* by reaſon he was a ſtraunger, was not ſo bolde, but hauing his minde dedicated to ſerue no other Saint but *Angelica*, looked for her, whom he eſpied at the further end of the Gallery in a heaute dumpe, leaning vpon her elbowe: who hearing *Marcellus* voyce, looked backe, and caſt her eye firſt on the Knight of *Fame*, on whom ſhe faſtned a ſtedfaſt eye a good ſpace: but remembring her ſelfe, with an exceeding bluſh, ſhe withdrew the ſame, becauſe ſhee ſawe his eye ſetled on her.

Marcellus by this time came towards *Angelica*, and perceiuing her bluſhing countenance, cauſed him to note how melancholly ſhee was alone, ſaying: How now Siſter, what ſolitarie ſtudie is that which hath withdrawne you from yonder pleaſant com-

panye

pany? My mind (quoth shee) is better exercised, by being sometimes alone then in their companie: but since your presence hath broken my meditation, I can bee well content to forsake the same to enioy your companie, which me thinkes is very rare.

I thanke you good Sister (quoth hee) assuring you, that I take it wondrous kindely, that you thinke so well of me, which hereafter you shall at your commaund enioy: withall, I desire you for my sake to bid this Knight welcome, whome I esteeme as dearely as my selfe: with that *Angelica* turned towards him, and hee with humble reuerence, kissed her hand, to whom *Angelica* said: Syr, by my brothers commaund I bid you welcome: the knight of *Fame* most humbly thanked her, being so exceedingly rauished in his minde with ioye, that no ioy might be compared to that hee endured.

Angelica on the other side was every way affected with as sweete content, by that opportunitie to take a more precise view of his comelinesse, entertaining the same with such surfetting delight, that shee not onely augmented the heate of her former affection, but also was now fettered in the dissoluеable bands of loue.

Marcellus and shee continued sometime in conference together, in which time *Angelica* cast many a sweete loke towardes the knight of *Fame*, which hee well perceiued, by reason his eye was neuer off her, which shee likewise noting, strined not to shew the like kindnes againe, but notwithstanding contrary to her purpose, her hearts inward affection, constrained her to behold him, which made her colour goe & come exceedingly: oftentimes breaking off her speeches with such passionate studies, & sometimes breathing a silent sigh, which *Marcellus* noted, but yet seemed not to marke. In the mean time, in comes the Queene, who calling *Marcellus* vnto her, entred into comunication with him, which when *Angelica* beheld, her heart began to throb & pant with a kinde of delight: the knight of *Fame* likewise was tormented with such diuersity of passion, being desirous to speak to *Angelica*, yet not daring to attempt such boldnes in presence of ỹ Quæn, hauing before heard of *Maximus* decrée. Whilest he was in this cogitation, *Anna* seeing her Sistresse alone, & the knight shee so dearly loued hard by her, came and vsed some speeches vnto her on him, which hee well noted, at last the Queene departed againe, and *Marcellus* went to sport amongst the rest of the Ladies, hauing before noted his Sisters passions, which hee was in some suspition was, by reason of the knight of *Fames* being there.

The ſecond part

The knight of *Fame* ſeing the Quéne departed, and *Marcellus* amongſt the Ladies, not raſhly attempting ſuch boldneſſe, but with a moſt ſubmiſſe and comely behauiour, drew towards *Angelica* (being ſurprized with ſuch a feare to offend) and care what to ſay, that his hart ſhoke therwith) and humbly kiſſing her hand, with a trembling feare he ſtil held the ſame in his palm, and ſaid: My diuine Lady, pardon my preſumption, that ouerboldly & cõtrary to my deſert, preſume to trouble your ſacred eares with my ſpeeches: which if I did ſuppoſe would be offenſiue, I would burie ſtil in the cloſet of my troubled heart, from whence they proceede: but if I may be ſo gracious in your ſight, as to gain the ſweet opportunitie by your fauourable licenſe, as to declare the depth of my deuotion, & how & in what ſort, and how long ſince I was enioyned to become your deuoted ſeruant, I ſhall reſt ſo much more inthralled to your vertues, as my poore heart ſhall for euer be vnable to yelde ſufficient thankes for: which I dare not preſume to do without your fauourable conſent, which I deſire you to grant. *Angelica* all this while ſtod as one tranſformed into baſhfulneſſe, being poſſeſt with delight, yet vnwilling to make any ſhew therof, which cauſed an exceeding bluſh beautifie her cheekes, which added ſome ſplendure to perfect beautie it ſelfe, which at all times appeared moſt liuely in her ſweete countenance: at laſt withdrawing her hand, which now began to ſweat with his ſtrickt embrace, which he was vnwilling to let goe, yet fearefull to hold without her cõſent, to whom ſhe made this anſwer: Sir, where no harme is ment, there needeth no ſuch intreatance for pardon, for the actuall offence I ſee none, but if any be intended, it is more then I know, and therefore without my power to forgiue: neither doth your ſpeech much pleaſe nor offend me, but if ſpoken with good meaning, I cannot blame, nor will deny to heare an other time: withall, wiſhing you not to thinke me tractable to euery perſwaſion, but haue yelded you that fauour, neuer yet any had at my hands: which peraduenture imboldneth you to vſe your accuſtomed maner of flatteries, whereunto moſt mẽ are addicted, wherein you ſhall do greatly amiſſe: for though I condiſcend to heare you, yet do not tinke my minde eaſily drawne to beleeue euery proteſtation. Moſt vertuous Lady (quoth he) neither do my words proceed fõ cuſtome, but my ſpeeches proceed from the depth of my true and humble heart, that hath vowed neuer to ſtart from the conſtant beautie, which hath long nurced many bitter torments, proceeded by deſire to find your vertuous ſelfe: which hath bin the cauſe of my long trauell.

Then

Then I moſt humbly beſeech you, eſteem of me as one that can breath no longer then he is in your fauour. For ſooner ſhall all things be diſſolued, then I faile in dutie to your ſeruice, and conſtancie to continue deuoted to your commaund: which if I may bee in any hope to attaine, though it be with the extreame hazard that euer knight indured, I ſhal account my ſelfe the moſt happieſt man liuing. Therefore I beſeech you, let no ſuſpected conceit of my truth, withdraw your vertues from pittying mee: for without the fruition of your ſweete fauour, it is impoſſible for me to liue. Beſeeching your excellencie likewiſe, not to ſuppoſe my words to proceede from fained affection, but from a heart that hath vowed to be perpetually conſtant, and will neuer ſtart frō truth, whatſoeuer miſeries or croſſes may happen to trie my conſtancie. *Angelica* hearing his ſpeeches, withall, noting with what motions and alterations his heart was oppreſſed, by the oft chaunge of his countenance, and withall, being her ſelfe euery way as much inthralled to loue as himſelfe, hoping that his heart, if it harboured true loyaltie, would not deeme amiſſe of his courteſie, (for the nobleſt minds are moſt drawne to pittie) gaue him this kinde reply.

Sir knight, your earneſt ſpeeches hath ſo much preuailed with mée, that gladly I would ſhewe you what kindeneſſe reſteth in me, but that I ſtil feare to bée deceiued: therefore if hereafter I ſée you conſtant, make no doubt but I wil bée ſo kinde as you can wiſh, and yéld you what recompence I can, in requitall of your good wil: withall, wiſhing you to thinke that my heart hath yelded you that fauour, which yet neuer any had from me.

Angelica had not ended thoſe words, but in comes *Maximus* puffing with deration, to whom *Columus* had declared, that the knight of *Fame* was ſome diſguiſed counterfeit, that came to ſéeke *Angelicas* loue (whereon his life depended) and comming to him, ſéeing him in talke with his daughter, ſaide. Knight (quoth he) what maketh thée thus bolde, ſo farre to preſume aboue thy deſert, to intrude thy ſelfe into my daughters company, which thou knoweſt is contrary to my decrée. Then taking *Angelica* by the arme, he thruſt her from him, commaunding *Columus* (who was ready at hand) to commit her to ſafe cuſtodie: and vpon paine of death, not to ſuffer any, not ſo much as his ſonne *Marcellus*, to come to her ſpeech: by whoſe meanes *Columus* had tolde him, the knight of *Fame* was brought into her companie.

Collimus hauing this charge, which was his owne seeking, immediately conueyed *Angelica* from their presence, who notwithstanding her fathers presence and displeasure, turned backe and gaue the knight of *Fame* a kinde loke at her departure, which he well noted, and therwith conceiued more ioy, then he tooke greefe at *Maximus* vnkindnesse.

By this time *Marcellus* was come to his father, who cast such a displeasant countenance vpon him, as that hee well perceiued hee was somewhat incenst against him: wherewith the king in a great rage departed, not speaking a word to him. After hee was gone, *Marcellus* comming to the knight of *Fame* (whose heart was nipt with greefe) and noting his sad countenance, departed with him down into the garden: where being come, *Marcellus* said as followeth. Deare friend (quoth he) for by other name I will neuer call you) be not disquieted with my fathers displeasure, who giueth too much credite to vntrue reports: and that causeth him both to be offended with any that speaketh to my sister, and also suspitious of all that come into his owne company, whereby he dishonoureth his owne name, liueth a troublesome life, and also keepeth her as it were in prison, which I am sure can breed no little care in her breast, whose hard hap I much pitie, and would any way ease, if it lay in my power.

Most honourable knight (quoth he) I am most hartily sorrie, that my ouerboldnes hath caused your fathers displeasure, & that diuine Ladies disquiet, which is more greeuous vnto me then death: which it was my accursed misfortune to procure, being drawn to that presumption by attractiue beautie: wishing that I had some way ended this my accursed life before my approach in this place, that therby I might not haue beene so vnfortunate, as to be a meanes of her care, and your disquiet: for that I see the king is likewise displeased with you. As for that take no care (quoth *Marcellus*) nor be so much greeued for my sister, for these troubles will be soone calmed: which to effect, let me alone. In the mean time, (whatsoeuer inward thoughts you conceiue) yet smother your discontent, and shew your selfe chearefull as heeretofore you haue bin: for I perceiue that some of enuie hath incensed my father, the truth whereof I will soone find out. *Marcellus* hauing ended these speeches, left the Knight of *Fame* walking in the garden, and presently without any shew or signs of discontent, went into the presence, where he found the king in company of *Camillus*, according to his wonted manner doing his reuerence, and taking his vsuall place. The king

marueiling

maruelling how hée durst so boldly presume into his presence, without reconcilement, thoght that either want of duety had procured the same, or else he did not perceiue hee was displeased with him: to ease himselfe of which doubt, hee said as followeth.

Marcellus, I had thought your care would haue béene greater to regard my good, then any mans else, considering you know the depth of my secrets: as concerning *Angelica*, on whose beautie my life doeth depend, and not so negligently and disobediently, not onely to suffer that straunge knight to proffer loue to her, but also to bee a meanes to bring him into her sight, and helpe him to her speech, wherein you haue shewen your selfe vndutifull, which maketh me rather to suspect you as one readie to séeke my life, then carefull to preserue the same. My Lord and Father (replied *Marcellus*) I trust your Maiestie do conceiue no such thought of mee, which haue in no degree deserued the same: much [illegible] besides my Lord, I do assuredly beseeue, you are misinformed of the straunge knights meaning, whose intent is both honorable, and from the least thought of loue to my Sister, but there are some in credit with your Highnesse, who disquiet you too much with their flatteries, and will rather reioyce to sée all things fall out according to their reportes, then bée any way sorrie to sée the same: whose speeches and false informations, I trust shall not alter your good opinion of my loyaltie: whose constant loue, duety, and obedience, shall continue firme, when theyr treacheries shall be reuealed, and they found traytors: therefore I beséeche your Highnesse, both alter your conceyued displeasure against mee, and the knight of *Fame*, of whom so honourable report hath bene spred in most places, for it will bee accounted an acte of great discourtesie, to vse him vnkindely.

Maximus hearing his sonnes speeches, in accusation of them hée moste fauoured, and in defence of the knight of *Fame*, against whom hée was mightily incenst, was turned into such collor, that he gaue him this rebuke. Darest thou both enuiously accuse my friends, and disloyally pleade for my enemie: henceforth presume no more into my sight, without my licence, for I wil rather estéeme thée as a priuie enemie, then as my naturall sonne. Which when hee had said, turning aside, *Marcellus* departed, maruelling who it should bee that had incensed the King against him, being so inwardly gréeued in his minde, that he thought to leaue no means vnassayed to learne the truth therof.

Ange-

Angelica as before is saide, being conueyed by *Collimus* to safe custodie, beganne to conceiue such sorrow for her fathers displeasure taken against the Knight of *Fame*, vnto whom shee beganne to beare an exceeding loue: such effect had his perswasiue speeches wrought in her gentle heart) that she entred into exceeding sorrowes, coniecturing diuersly what disquiet that discontent might breede by reason of her fathers iealous suspect already begunne: and how the Knight of *Fame* might be abused in that straunge place, hauing no friend to take his part, which thought strooke a suddaine pensiuenesse to her heart. Contrarily, she thought that would be a meanes to trye his loyaltie, which somewhat would haue eased her heart, so that no other danger would haue ensued thereon. At last, hauing no other meanes of comfort, (nor friend to impart her minde vnto) she called *Anna* vnto her and willed [illegible] presently went about the businesse *Angelica* [illegible] we leaue them all in diuers cogitations.

CHAP. XVIII.

How the Knight of Libia hearing that the Knight of Fame was in Natolia, by Flauias false accusation, sent messengers to Maximus, to intreate him to put him to death. How Maximus threw him into the Lyons den.

After that the Knight of *Fame* was departed from *Libia*, and *Venola* had knowledge thereof by *Flauia*, she continued many daies in great sorrow, but afterwards by tract of time calming her greefe, but no whit her affection, by *Flauias* perswasions, who was priuie to all her actions, turned her former good will that was grounded vpon vertue, to lust and mad desire: that seeing she ou'd not by faire meanes winne him to her loue, she thought to leaue no meanes vnassayed, either by force to compell him thereto, or else in some measure to be reuenged on him for his discourtesie. The minde beeing alwaies readie by euery perswasion, to yeelde to worke any meanes for to procure desired content: euen so she casting about many deuises with *Flauia*, one day (finding fit opportunitie when the King was in his dumps,

for *Venilias* ſickeneſſe) came vnto him; and tolde him that the cauſe of his Daughters ſickneſſe, was procured by an exceeding fright ſhee had taken by the diſcourteous vſage of the knight of *Fame*, who for that cauſe was lately fledde from the Court, which vntill that day ſhee had concealed from her, neither ſhould ſhee euer recouer her ſelfe, vntill ſhee were in ſome hope to be reuenged of him.

The King willed her to declare the ſame vnto him. *Flauia* then beganne as followeth. My Lord, this knight preſuming often into my Miſtreſſe preſence, by reaſon of the kindneſſe ſhee ſhewed him, for working her releaſe in *Brandamors* Caſtle, (which hee well deſerued) beganne oftentimes to make loue to her, whom ſhee anſwered in good ſort, being vnwilling to make choiſe of any, but by your appointment: but in the ende, his ſutes grewe to that importunacie, that hee would haue no denial, but comming into her chamber, chuſing his fitteſt opportunitie, when my Miſtreſſe was in her bedde, and ſurpriſing her vnawares, offered her exceeding ſhame and villanie, but being by her ſtriuing and out-crie diſappoynted of his full intent, hee preſentlie fledde away.

The King hearing *Flauias* ſpeeches, was exceedingly inraged with furie, commaunding his knights to poſte euery way, to learne where he made his abode. This newes being ſpred, at laſt came to a knight of *Natolia* who by occaſion was then in the *Lybian* Court who preſently came to the king, and tolde him that hee needed not to make inquyrie for the knight of *Fame*, for that hee was at the Golden Tower. The King hearing that newes, was exceedingly gladde thereof, commanding his knightes to haye their iourney writing a letter to *Maximus*, to this effect.

MOſt mightie King, I ſalute you: requeſting you to worke reuenge in my behalf vpon a traitor, who now remaineth with you, who hath diſhonoured my Daughter: hee is called the Knight of *Fame*: aſſuming that name to colour his wicked practiſes, who no doubt will ſoone deuiſe ſome miſchiefe againſt your perſon: let him not eſcape your hands, but rather ſend him to mee, that I may reuenge that monſtrous iniurie hee hath done mee, by his life: which onely ſhall ſatiſfie mee. Thus remembring my loue to you, and deſiring your ſecrecie, I ceaſe.

Your brother of Lybia.

The ſecond part

Hauing written this letter, and ſealed it with his ſignet, hée preſently ſent the ſame by certaine of his knightes to the Golden Tower, who as effectually diſpatched theyr iourney, as hee hadde giuen them ſtraight charge: and arriuing at the Golden Tower, deliuered the letter to *Maximus*, who hauing redde the ſame, and well conſidered the circumſtance, which augmented his hatred and ſuſpition alreadie begunne againſt the knight of *Fame*, preſently comming to the place where hée was in talke with *Marcellus*, hée cauſed him to be apprehended, and without any other iudgement, cauſed him preſently to be caſt into a denne of Lyons, to be deuoured.

The knight of *Fame* was no ſooner put into the denne, but the Lyons made an exceeding roaring, that theſe without aſſuredlie iudged him deuoured, and himſelfe expected nothing but that terrible and fearfull death: but the Lyons, who by nature will not harme thoſe of Royall blood, ſpared his life, and not ſo much as offered to touch him but were rather terrified with his preſence. Hée being glad of this happy eſcape, beganne to aſſure himſelfe that hée was ſprung of kingly race, which greatly comforted his heart, and added a perſwaſiue hope to comfort himſelfe withall, that by that occaſion hee ſhould attaine to *Angelicas* loue, if hée could worke meanes for his releaſement out of that place: moſt of all hée wondred why *Maximus* had offered him that outrage. In theſe and ſuch like cogitations he ſpent the reſt of the day.

Marcellus ſeeing the knight whome hée moſt dearely loued deſtroyed, without iudgement, equity, or cauſe, was ſo inwardly inraged, that he was in minde oftentimes to worke himſelfe iniurie, and ſeeke meanes of reuenge, if he knew who had bene the cauſer thereof: and not knowing what to doo, nor in whoſe companie to ſpende his time, hée preſently thought to goe to *Angelica*, whom hee thought bare ſome good will to the knight of *Fame*, with her to bemoane his vntimelie death: but comming to the place where ſhée was, hée would haue entred therein, but *Collimus* according to *Maximus* commaund, denyed him, and that the more obſtinately, for that hée knew none fauoured the knight of *Fame* ſo much as hée, whom he mortally hated.

Marcellus being before ſufficiently inraged, was now ſo much more vexed, that hee drewe his dagger, and with a violent blow ſtabbed the ſame to *Collimus* heart: and withall going to *Angelica*, hee found her very ſad, little thinking of theſe miſchances, who ſeeing him

in

in that rage, which shée soone perceiued by his behauiour, shée came vnto him, (hauing seated himselfe downe in a chayre) and desired to know the cause of his wrath.

O Sister (quoth hée) this place is the harbour of crueltie, tirannie, and dishonour, which in times past hath bene famous, and a receipt of honour, but shortly will be hated and shunned, as odious & omniminious, and all procured by the foolish Dotting of a wicked Harlot, that hath filled my Fathers head with such fancies, that hée forgetteth himselfe, his honour, and kingly behauiour, and geueth credit to none but flatterers, and parasites, imprisoning his children, murthering his friends, and seeking the subuersion of honour and honourable knights. Oh *Angelica*, what should I say, or to whome should I complaine? hée hath slaine vertue, he hath destroyed honour, hée hath murthered my deare friend, that kinde and courteous knight: hée hath cast the vnknowne (most honorable though vnknowne) Knight of *Fame*, into the Lyons den: without iudgement, iustice, right, offence, or tryall. *Angelica* hearing his words, was ready to sound with greefe, but that feare to discouer her loue withheld her: but being not able to refraine from teares, she withdrew her selfe aside to conceale the same, which *Marcellus* espying, caught her in his armes, and said. Nay deare Sister, do not conceale your greefe for his death from mée, that loue you so much the better: and if you euer conceiued any good liking of him, I shall honour you for the same: for hée was worthy to be beloued of the best Lady in the world: for in him shined all parties and poynts of true Knighthood and honour. I cannot (quoth *Angelica*) denie, but that I liked and loued him so: neither shall I euer do otherwise whilest I liue, though hee knewe not so much: for whose death, my heart shall neuer harbour quiet, nor neuer shall thought of other loue finde into my breast: for him had I vowed to loue, and that vowe will I keepe inuiolable, whilest life doth last.

Oh *Angelica* (quoth *Marcellus*) had I knowne you had loued him so well, I would haue dyed with him, but I would haue saued his life, which was so suddainly acted, and so vnexpected, that before I could recouer my senses from amazement, he was past my reach. What cause had my Father thinke you, to seeke his destruction, but because hée saw him in speeche with you? Aye me (quoth *Angelica*) was I the cause of his death? I will then go to him: with that, such greefe oppressed her heart, that shée fell downe in his armes.

Marcellus called to her Maides, who presentlie came thronging about her, marvelling at her suddaine sickenesse: and especially *Anna*, who was priuie to her thoughts, & hearing *Marcellus* speaches, made great lamentation. This newes was some come to the Queenes hearing, who presently came running vnto the place, and having by her labour recouered her, entred into these speaches. Why how now *Angelica*, what meanest thou to doe thy selfe this wrong? What mischance or suddaine passion hath caused this disquiet? Then turning to *Marcellus*, Or can you tell *Marcellus* (quoth she) for you were by. I know not (quoth he) but I am sure we have all cause of little ioye, when we that are the Kings children shall be imprisoned vpon the flattering report of euery dissembling Sycophant. Why quoth she who hath abused you? That did *Columnus* (quoth he) & him I have rewarded. Besides, my Lorde and Father hath destroyed that honorable straunge knight, because I loued him, who never deserued the least cause of such cruelty, but was alwayes honourable esteemed in euery Kings Court vntil it was his ill happe to arriue in this vnfortunate place, to ende his life by Tiranny, not by Justice. Take heede *Marcellus*, scandalize not your Fathers honour, which may bring you in daunger: for that he hath done nothing but right, and with good consideration, for beholde that letter, and thou shalt some see what a counterfait that Knight of *Fame* was.

Marcellus having redde the letter, was at the first suddainlie amazed thereat, but yet notwithstanding, he said: vpon my life this accusation is most false and vntrue. *Angelica* taking the letter, and reading the same, was exceedingly astonished thereat, to whome *Marcellus* saide. *Angelica* beleeue it not, for if you doe, you shall too much wrong that honourable Knight, that is too much abused alreadie, who if he were liuing, would some proue these accusations false: but the good Knight is now dead, and past recalling, whose death will bring more dishonour to the *Natonians*, then euer will be recouered. Why (quoth the Queene) what maketh thee *Marcellus* so inconsiderate, by taking a strangers part, to indaunger thy owne life, which knowest the kings humour? Loue (quoth he) to that straunger, maketh me bewaile his vntimely death, whom I would that I had excused.

The Queene seing *Angelica* somewhat well recouered, departed vnto *Maximus*, who by that time had knowledge of *Columnus* death, & was meditating how to chastise *Marcel.* for his presumption:

But

But the Quéene vppon her knées intreated him to pardon him, alleaging that *Collimus* had greatly abused him: with much adoe the King was pacified.

Marcellus hauing somewhat comforted *Angelica*, in a beanie and sadde estate, departed to his chamber, and left her with her Damozell *Anna*, rather readie to yéelde vppe the Ghoast, then otherwise likelie to surviue: and night béeing come, shee refusing meat, went to her bedde, not to slape, but to bewaile the knight of *Fames* vntimely death.

The knight of *Fame* all this time remained in the Lyons denne, carefully deuising which way to gette out of that place, tyring his senses, but finding no meanes of release. One while accusing his harde fortune, and then *Maximus* for his cruelties. Sometimes fearing to bee famished in that place: and then comforting himselfe with perswasions of impossible deliuerie. Now dispairing to bee vtterly exempt from the sweete sight of *Angelica*, whose absence and restraint of libertie (procured as hee thought by his boldnesse) pinched his heart with extreame torture.

In this sort hee continued so long, vntil that hée was readie to be starued, and constrained to eate such vnsauozy foode as was daily cast to the Lyons. *Angelica* likewise no whit mittigated her greefe but rather augmented the same: being much comforted by *Marcellus*, whose minde was not yet satisfied with sufficient consideration of these mischaunces, but both hée and *Angelica* continued as it were in a further hope in their fancies, of the knight of *Fames* safetie: though when they beganne to comfort themselues with any perswasions, they were quite past hope. *Maximus* likewise hauing considered with what seueritie hée had vsed the knight, and that hée had condemned him without any triall of the accusation that had bene vsed by his knights, euer since his death, (begamie to tell a remorse in his conscience of vniustice) but by the setled opinion that was stirred in his heart by those false Prophesies, hée some shooke the same off.

Cumillus all this time, likewise noted what iealous suspition the king heard of him, and hauing heard the report why he kept his daughter so strongly guarded, and of set purpose withheld her from his sight, and noting how suddainly the knight of *Fame* was made away, without anie cause of offence giuen, he began to feare himselfe, and by that meanes, durst not shewe anie signe of desire to see *Angelica*, least by

that meanes hee ſhould ſeeke ſome occaſion of quarrell with him, and uſe him like the ſtraunger: within a while departed from the Golden Tower, intending notwithſtanding, either with force or faire meanes, to attaine her poſſeſſion.

CHAP. XIX.

Of the Knight of Fames preſervation. How hee gat out of the denne, and departed the Tower.

THe next day after *Camillus* departure, which *Maximus* perceiued was with a diſcontented mind, the keeper of the Lyons denne, came to make cleane the ſame, and uſed his wonted manner, which was to ſet open thoſe places that were cleane, into which the Lyons would ſome enter, and hauing faſt bolted the doores, and being owner of the Lyons, entered into the den, where the Knight of *Fame* was, who ſuddainly caught holde on him, (hauing before ſecretly ſhrowded himſelfe from his ſight) and being carefull to prouide for his owne ſafetie, ſnatcht from his ſide a hanging ſword: the keeper knowing him, marualling to ſee him aliue, and exceedingly aſtoniſhed at his ſight, held vp his hands for mercie, to whome the knight of *Fame* ſaid. My friend, I ſeeke not thy life, but mine owne ſafetie, being as thou ſeeſt, preſerued by Diuine prouidence, from the Kings crueltie, by him vniuſtly caſt into this place, without any cauſe of offence: but wrongfullie, as thou mayeſt perceiue by my preſeruation: for if my fact had deſerued punihment, no doubt I could not haue eſcaped the crueltie of theſe executioners, hauing endured great daunger of puniſhment. Now my requeſt vnto thee is, that thou wouldeſt but ſuffer me to departe from hence, without eſpying mee, for I haue no reaſon to truſt to *Maximus* curteſie, hauing already endured this miſerie by his Crueltie: which thou mayeſt well doo, without endaungering thy ſelfe anie kinde of waye, for there is none but hath aſſuredly thinke I am dead.

The keeper hearing his ſpeeches, and withall ſeing how admyrably hee was preſerued, and alſo fearing his owne death, aſſured him by many bowes and proteſtations, not onely to doo that which hee had deſired, but alſo would moſt faithfully execute what other thing ſoeuer hee

her should commaund, to his vttermost power. Wilt thou then (quoth he) owe this for me? giue me the keyes, and make fast the doore so that thou canst not goe from me, and then call downe thy boye and sende him to *Marcellus*, to request him to come to thee, but in such sorte, that the boy may not see me, and also to do his message secretly: which the keeper tolde him, he would most willingly performe. Then vpon this the knight of *Fame* vow to locke the doore, that he could not escape, he called downe his boy, who presently came to him whom he commanded to seeke out *Marcellus* secretly, and to desire him, that he would vouchsafe to come and speake with him, about a matter of great importance. The boy hauing receiued his message, immediately hasted to execute the same: and most fortunately met him in the outer court, to whom he declared the cause of his comming. *Marcellus* marueiling why the keeper had sent for him, presently began to remember the knight of *Fame*, with which his heart began to throb: but hasting downe to the den, the keeper commanded his boy to depart: & humbling himselfe to *Marcellus*, told him that the knight of *Fame* was still liuing. Which said, he ran in vnto him (who had shrowded himselfe from his sight) and tolde him *Marcellus* was come: then presently hee came forth, whom *Marcellus* espying, with great reioycing, caught him in his armes, and most louingly embraced him, seeming to be reuiued with ioye, in respect of the care oppressed his minde before hee hadde knowledge of his safetie. Manie courteous greetings past on either side, *Marcellus* desired the keeper not to reueale this secrete to any: for if it should come to my fathers hearing, it were impossible then to preuent his rigour: and withall promised him, that if he would let him lodge in his house but that night, he would reward him most bountifully: and withall promised him to higher dignitie, and to such place of account as that he should haue good cause to reioyce, that euer the knight of *Fame* came within his house. The keeper both drawne by his owne good inclination, and also by the hope of rewarde and preferment, being but poore, promised his vttermost ayde and assistance to pleasure him, and withall, to performe his full desire, with such securitie, that none should conceyue anie suspition thereof: with that they all together departed vp into his Lodge, where the Knight of *Fame* refreshed himselfe with comfortable meates, being exceedingly glad (as he had good cause) of this successe: and rendring many thankes to *Marcellus* (who well deserued the same.)

Marcellus

The second part

Marcellus being yet somewhat troubled in his minde about the Letter the King of *Lybia* had sent, and desirous to bee satisfied of the troth therein, taking the Knight of *Fame* aside, from the hearing of the Keeper, spake as followeth.

Sir knight, although I have shewen you this favour and friendship, which my fancie often perswaded me to refuse, yet bygged by the good will I beare you, and for other considerations which I will yet conceale from you, I could not chuse but reioyce at your safetie, and worke what meanes I can for your preservation: yet there remaineth a grudging in my conscience against you, untill you assure me by your faithfull oath, to satisfie me of the truth of my doubt without fraude: for if that be true which is alleadged against you, by the affirmation of a King, you deserue the punishment my Father inflicted upon you, and rather to bee generally hated, then beloued at all. Most honourable knight (quoth he) I know my selfe so cleare from all such villanie, as that I sweare, and protest by my life, by Heauen, and by all the gods that euer I erpect, which I detest to torme to my destruction, if I tell you not the very truth.

When (quoth *Marcellus*) the same day that the King my Father caused you to be throwne into the Lions den, the king of *Lybia* sent his other certaine of his Knights with a Letter, wherein he accused you to haue most shamefully dishonoured his Daughter *Venola*, desiring my Father to dispatch you out of the way: for your life (nothing else might appease his ire: which was the cause of his cruelties.

My Lord (quoth the knight of *Fame*) upon mine honour, my former oath, and by all other truth and fidelitie, this accusation is most vniust, false, and untrue: which if I may by your fauor, (in whose hands life now resteth) haue libertie to approue, I will maintaine the contrary euen in the gates of the king of *Lybia*, and cause my accusers to confesse the contrarie: neyther did I euer seeke loue at that Ladies hands, by whose dishonourable meanes this false accusation is raised against mee.

Weare friend (quoth *Marcellus*) you haue said enough, and I rest assuredly satisfied of your loialty. The knight of *Fame* was so inwardly vexed with this accusation that he was halfe made mad with greef, but chiefly for that hee thought it was come to *Angelica* hearing, (might bee a meanes to cause her vtterlie to forsake him: which appalled his senses with extreame vexation, that hee stood like one transformed.

Marcel-

Marcellus perceiuing his discontent, desired him not to bee greeued, but to ouerpasse the same, vntil hee hadde meanes to proue the contrarie.

My Lord (replyed hee) how can I chuse but be sorrie, when thereby I am dishonoured in euery mans opinion, which I account more dearer then my life? Besides, with what impatiencie may I shew my selfe before any knight liuing, but rather rid my hated selfe out of this miserable life, which is the next way to laiue this blemish? But if you will vouchsafe to heare the true report of the miseries I haue indured euer since my byrth, you would say that I am the onely mappe of sorrow, and borne to perpetuall calamitie. I desire nothing more (quoth *Marcellus*) with that hee rehearsed to him all that hee could, of his bringing vp in the Iland of *Rockes*, his departure from thence, and shipwracke at Sea: how he was entertained by D. *Amasenus* in *Thrace*, and the treacherie that was intended against him there, by *Corus* and *Argalus*: then of his successe in the Kings Court of *Thrace*, and the occasion why hee departed from thence to the Forest of *Arden*: and how there he met the Prince of *Bohemia*, and released *Venola*: then how *Venola* sought his loue, and how shee gaue him (by subtiltie) a somniferous potion, to withholde his departure with *Parismus*, which hee purposed: and how afterwards perceyuing her intent, departed from thence.

Withall, hee declared the manner of the vision that appeared vnto him in *Thrace*, and how that hee was thereby enioyned to seeke out the Lady that appeared to him, and sue for her loue, which was the cause that hee both refused *Phylenas* marriage, and *Venolas* proffer of kindenesse: and also hee declared how hee first arriued in that countrie, and met *Angelica*, which was the very same Lady that appeared vnto him in the vision: and also told him that hee was likewise enioyned to seeke out his Parents, which the vision told him were of great birth. This (quoth hee) is the true discourse of my forepassed life, which I neuer yet manifested to any but your selfe, whose fauour hath farre surmounted my desert, into whose hands I commit my life to bee disposed of: desiring you not to conceyue amisse of mee, for that false accusation, being most vntrue.

Marcellus againe embracing him in his armes, desired him likewise, not to thinke that hee did any way conceiue the least euill opinion of him, but that he did esteeme of him, as of the dearest friend he had in

the world, and that he did both loue and honour him as himſelfe, and would neuer forſake him whilſt he liued, but continue his faithfull friend for euer. Hauing in this ſort made a new league of amity. *Marcellus* left the Knight of *Fame* to his priuate meditations, promiſing to returne to him very ſhortly, going diuerſly to *Angelica*, whom he found continuing her wonted ſadneſſe, for ſhe could by no meanes be comforted but ſtill augmented her loue, by remembring the knight of *Fames* perſon, to whom ſhe bare ſuch intire affections that ſhe reſolued neuer to loue any other Knight, but determined to ſpende the whole date of her life in ſingle eſtate.

Marcellus ſuddaine approach brake off her ſilent penſiuenеſſe, by his countenance ſhewing a heart repleniſht with ioy which he vttered in this ſort. *Angelica* quoth he) caſt off this ſadde countenance, for I bring you newes of more comfort, for the knight of *Fame* is liuing and preſerued by admirable meanes. O brother quoth ſhe) this newes cannot be true, which will nip my heart with greefe to heare of, and be diſappointed therein. Siſter quoth he) it is ſo neither marueil thereat, for his innocencee in the fact laid to his charge, hath I thinke cauſed the Gods to pittie him: beſides, thereby you may be aſſured, he is borne of royall blood, who is now in the keepers houſe in ſafetie, with whom I haue beene theſe two houres: now caſt off thoſe ſtormy diſcontents and cloudes of care, for there is no further cauſe of diſquiet for his ſuppoſed death.

Angelica then verily preſuming his words, ſaid. Good brother, tell me how he doth, for whoſe ſafetie I reioyce? for of all the knights that euer I beheld, I neuer liked nor loued any ſo well, deſiring you withall, to keepe my counſell, (hauing bewrayed my ſecrets to none elſe) and not to let him know ſo much as I haue told you. Then ſhould both you and I do him wrong quoth he, for he hath well deſerued loue, and eſpecially at your hands, to whom by his owne report, he hath long ago dedicated himſelfe, and not onely of his owne inclination, but of a high command: for the truth of which, he hath vpon truſt of my ſecrecie, reuealed to me, which you ſhall likewiſe heare: then he diſcouered the whole truth, euen as the Knight of *Fame* had before done; which when ſhe heard ſhe ſaid. What a diſcourteous Lady is that *Venela*, to ſeeke the ouerthrow of ſo worthie a knight: and how may I eſteeme him, that before her he was ſo conſtant in his loue, without hope of my fauour, and refuſed the proffered loue of two ſuch

Ladies

Ladies for my ſake: beſides the perill he hath indured in my ſearch, and peradventure is ſprung of greater birth then my ſelfe. And now alſo by my Parent downe, was put in that hazard of his life. Good brother be you carefull of his good, and whatſoever you ſhall counſell me to, I will do: if my Father ſhould know of his ſafetie, then were there no meanes for him to eſcape death: for ſuch a hard conceit of ſuſpect doth poſſeſſed his minde, that hee hateth all thoſe that beare mee any ſhewe of good will. Well ſiſter (quoth *Marcellus*) reſt you contented, and ſtill continue your love towards him, to increaſe & not diminiſh the ſame, who is by deſtinie allotted to be your huſband: the care of whoſe welfare let be my charge: for I ſo much love and eſteeme him both for his owne and your ſake, that I will leave no meanes unaſſayed, whereby to do you good: which ſaid, hee againe departed to the knight of *Fame*. By this time the dark night approched, and *Marcellus* and the knight of *Fame* were deviſing what meanes to vſe for his ſafetie, and to procure the deſired content *Angelica* expected, who before had given her conſent to be ruled by her Brother: that by the aſſurance he had of her, hee put the knight of *Fame* in aſſured comfort of her love, by relating in ſome ſort, the contents of *Angelicas* conference before had with him, which affected his heart with greater ioy, then ever before he had indured greefe: that his eſcape from death did not comfort his heart ſo much as this happy news. At laſt *Marcellus* ſaid: Noble knight, you ſee how ſtrictly my Father gardeth *Angelica*, that there is no meanes left to eaſe your greefe or her care by tarrying here: neither can you without great hazard of your life, remaine within the circuit of this Tower: for that my Father ſuſpecteth every one, yea his owne children, whereby wee are tired with thoſe troubles, and would willingly worke any meanes to eaſe our ſelves: eſpecially *Angelica* hath bene mewed up ſo cloſely, that ſhee I am ſure would undertake any thing to enioy her liberty, were it in never ſo poore eſtate, wherein in my opinion is many thouſands of ſweete contents to bee found, rather then in this troubleſome Pompe, which is repleat with infinit cares. Therfore this is my cenſure, that you ſhall this night (as I will direct you) depart from hence, and go to S. *Auſtins* Chappell, not far hence, and there ſtay for mee untill to morrow morning, where remaineth an olde religious Prieſt, named *Labine* who if you ſay you come from mee, will give you entertainment: which when you have done, I will to worke with my Siſter *Angelica*,

that he shall condiscend by such meanes as I will worke for her secret escape, to come to you: by which I hope I shall ende the doubts that possesse my fathers minde, ridde their Country of the scandall it is likely to runne into: and worke both mine owne, yours, and *Angelicas* content: for so dearely do I loue her, that had I many liues to lose, I wou'd hazard them all to worke her releasement: for were shee once married, then should the date of the foolish prophecie haue an ende. The Knight of *Fame* hearing his speeches, which onely tended to worke the content, he aboue all things in the world sought, could not well contain himselfe from expressing immeasurable ioy, but yeelding many humble and hartie thankes to *Marcellus* both commended his deuise, and also intreated him to goe forward with the same.

Then *Marcellus* called the keeper, asking his counsell if he knew any deuise whereby the Knight of *Fame* might get out of the Castle, promising him a good reward: and withall pulling from his neck a chaine of gold, gaue him the same. The keeper being intised with this reward, (golde hauing that force, to make things impossible come to effect presently) tolde them, he had a deuise that might goe for current, if the knight would vndertake the same. I haue my Lord (quoth he) a vessell of great largenesse, which sometimes serued for other vses, which if we could deuise to let downe into the Lake, he might easily in that get ouer on to the other side: which deuise *Marcellus* and the Knight of *Fame* both liked. And about midnight, when all things were at rest, they put this same in practise, and by a Rope let the vessel down, which swam most currantly.

Then fastning a Roape about the Knight of *Fames* middle, after that (with many faire premises and protestations of perpetuall friendship) they had taken their leaues, the keeper and *Marcellus* let him downe, who was so heauie by reason of the waight of his owne body and his armour, that they had much adoe from letting him fall, and being in the vessel, was like to sinke the same. But with much adoe and great daunger of drowning, by reason of the tottering and vnstaiednesse of the vessell, which with every little waight more on one side then on the other, was ready to turne ouer, hee got on to the banke, which was so steepe vpwards, that he had much adoe to clime vp the same, but was oftentimes readie to fall downe backwards into the Lake vnder him, which was of an exceeding great and huge depth:

but

but hauing happily eſcaped both thoſe daungers, he departed towards Saint *Auguſtines* Chappell, according to ſuch directions *Marcellus* hadde giuen him to finde the ſame. *Marcellus* and the keeper drew vp the Veſſell, and betoke themſelues to their reſt.

The Knight of *Fame* had not well remembred *Marcellus* ſpeeches, and therefore hauing gone ſome halfe mile from the Golden Tower, fearing to wander out of the way, hee toke vp his lodging vnder a Cipreſſe Tree, ſpending the whole night in manifolde meditations, of the ſucceſſe of this buſineſſe: beeing oftentimes in great diſpaire of euer ſeeing *Angelica* againe, drawne to that feare, by reaſon of *Maximus* iealouſie, and the diligent watche hee had ſet in euery corner of the Tower, but eſpecially at the entrance, where none went out and in, but the gardians ſearched them, that his minde was ſometimes wracke with diſpaire, and ſometime animated to comforte by the aſſured truſt hee had in *Marcellus*. The night being by him in this ſorte ſpent, in the morning hee betoke himſelfe againe to his iourney, and with eaſe found out Saint *Auſtins* Chappell, & knocking at the Chappell doore, it was long before any came, but at laſt hee eſpied olde *Iabin* ſtanding behinde him, who had bene abroade very early, and then returned, whom the Knight of *Fame* moſt kindely ſaluted. *Iabin* marueiling to ſee one in Armor, demaunded what he would haue?

Right reuerend Father (quoth he) I am ſent to you by *Marcellus*, whoſe requeſt is, that you would for his ſake vouchſafe my ſecrete abode with you vntill his comming, which will be this day, if contrary occaſion hinder him not. *Iabin* noting his comely proportion, and willing to doe anie thing for *Marcellus* ſake, brought him into his Cell adioyning to the Chappell, and welcommed him ſo kindely as he could.

CHAP. XX.

How Marcellus entending to carrie Angelica to Saint Auſtins Chappell, was prevented by Camillus. And how the Knight of Fame departed to ſeeke his Parents.

Marcellus early in the morning, came to *Angelica*, who ſtill continued penſiue, to whome hee declared what had paſſed betwixt him and the Knight of *Fame*, and withall of the promiſe hee had made him to bring her to Saint *Auſtins* Chappell. Which when An-

gelica hearing, she said: Brother, how can this be effected, when you see so many impossibilities to hinder our intent, that we shall but spend much labour to little effect, and also rather bring my fathers heavy displeasure against us, then reape any comfort? whose cruelty you see is such, that he will if he should finde out our drift, punish us with severitie: besides, if it should come to that passe, what excuse could you finde to pacifie his ire? Thereto: I thinke it best, that we never hazard our selves, but rather be contented with this quiet estate, lest a worse mischance light upon us thereby.

Sister (quoth *Marcellus*) your counsell is good, but yet heare what I shall say: the life you leade is but miserable, being kept like a prisoner, whereas, if you could but win this libertie, you should enjoy your full of hearts content, and be a meanes to rid my father and us all, from the doubts we may now endure. Besides, if you loved that worthy knight, whose constancie to you wards is without compare, you wold for his sake refuse no peril. Why brother (quoth she) what neede you make any such doubt when I have said sufficient already, unlesse you thinke me to dissemble? for such is my love and good will, that I will more willingly undertake any meanes to attaine his company, then he can desire: not drawne by your perswasion, but of my owne voluntary will: which have made some doubt of this attempt, because I am fearefull of your ill, and careful of your good: but whatsoever you shall counsaile me unto, I wil execute. Which said, they began to studie and consult how to bring their businesse about: but were so confounded in their thoughts, that they thought it altogether impossible.

Now *Maximus* being ridde of *Camillus* company, and assured of the knight of *Fames* death, gave his minde to more quiet, then during the time of their being there he had done: and being wearied with care, thought to recreate himselfe by some exercise: therefore he appointed the very same day to ride on hunting: and to that intent he was early up, sending for *Angelica* to goe with the Queene, even at the instant when she was devising with *Marcellus*: which opportunitie fell out most conveniently to further their intent, which *Marcellus* told her he would determine of.

Angelica immediately went downe with the messenger: and with the King and Queene, *Marcellus* and divers others departed out of the towne. *Marcellus* all that day kept diligent company with *Angelica*, until the King being earnest in pursuite of the game, strayed from them:

them: the Queene likewise was absent, and moste of *Angelicas* gardiants, saving some fewe, being indeede such as *Marcellus* had before made priuie to his intent, who had firmely protected to keepe his counsaile: which opportunitie *Marcellus* tooke, and presently conueyed *Angelica* towards Saint *Anselmes* Chappell: being without the Parke, when they thought themselues farre enough from the King, they were vnawares set vpon by a company of straunge knights, who offered by force to carrie away *Angelica*.

Marcellus being somewhat astonisht thereat, drew his sworde, and being before well prouided, withstood them. *Angelicas* gardiants did the like: that on a suddaine there began a cruell combat betwixt them, vntill *Marcellus* was greeuously wounded, one of his company slaine, and the rest in as great danger as might bee: but being a knight of exceeding courage, he defended himselfe most valiantly. So long continued the fight, that in the meane time, some of the kings company, hauing the charge of *Angelica*, misst her, which her some declared to the king, who commaunded his knights to poste euery way by seuerall troupes: himselfe and the Queene well guarded, tooke the readiest way out of the Parke: which was the same way *Marcellus* and *Angelica* had taken, and hasting, came to the place where they were, in the hottest of their skyrmish.

The straunge knights espying the King, presently fledde away, with all possible speede, whome many of the *Natolians* pursued so farre, vntill they might discrie a band of Souldiers: wherewith they returned with all expedition possible, and certified the King thereof, who presently hasted to the Golden Tower, with the Queene, *Marcellus* and *Angelica* in his companie: and by reason of the straungers hee saw in fight with *Marcellus*, hee hadde not the least suspition of *Angelicaes* entended flight: and marualling what that Armye shoulo meane, hee sent out spyes to viewe of what force they were, who hauing done in all poynts accordingly, they went and certified him that they were tenne thousand Souldiers, but they could not discerne vnder whose conduct.

Maximus fearing the worst, presently sent letters to the Nobles of his Land with all expedition to muster vp theyr forces, and to conuey them to the Golden Tower: and also caused most diligent watch and warde to be kept.

Marcellus

Marcellus being most grieuously wounded, was likewise with all care tended by the kings Physitians, to whom *Angelica* repaired: and being with him alone, she said as followeth.

What misery awayteth my hard destenie, that am thus desasterly detained from my wished content? my euill presaging minde, did foretell this misfortune, which hath thus frustrated our desire, and which is more miserable, brought you to this dangerous estate: but most of all withheld me from the sight of my beloued, and causeth him both to augment his cares, and suspect our loyaltie. What will he thinke when he seeth no performaunce of that which was promised, but still stayeth for our comming, and yet bee frustrated? for the knowledge of our mischance, can by no meanes come to his hearing. Would to God that I had ended my accursed life, by the handes of these enemies rather then to haue suruiued to endure this extreame care. No hard fortune can be compared to that I endure, no care comparable to my griefe. First to see you thus greeuously wounded: next to bee disappointed of our desire: and lastly to frustrate the knight of *Fame* of his expectation. What shall wee now doo? how shall we recure this mishap? or what meanes is there left, that may adde the least comfort to our harts in this extremitie? In stead of the content I expected by enioying his presence, I am returned to my wonted bondage: and see my friendes almost murdred and enuyroned with foes. Peace peace (quoth *Marcellus*) good *Angelica*, ceasse these complaints, and in this extreamitie, immitate the olde phrase: make a vertue of necessitie, and with patience awayte for better successe: for now in these perplexities, there is small hope of present amendement: for that worthy knight no doubt is of such wisedome and prudent gouernement, that hee will iudge the best of our state, and carefully prouide for his owne safetie. With that *Angelica* burst forth into abundance of teares weeping. Ape mee poore wretch, I shall neuer then see him againe. With that shee departed, wringing her handes, and making great lamentation, that *Marcellus* seeing her sorrowe, was readie to worke his owne decaye by his veration.

Nowe those bandes of Souldiers belonging to *Camillus*, who presentlie after his departure from the Golden Tower, endured manie restlesse Passions, for the want of *Angelicas* presence, with whome hee was full greatly in loue: with all speede muttered vppe those

those forces and brought them by shipping towards the Tower, with intent to besiege the same, and suddainly to surprise *Maximus* unawares, and so to get the possession of *Angelica*: and comming towards the Golden Tower with a fewe in his company, whilest the rest marched after him, he met *Marcelus* and *Angelica*, and knowing them, thought without any more trouble to take her away, but was disappointed as is declared.

The Knight of *Fame* being with olde *Iabine*, spent much part of the day in conference with him, marueling that he heard not from *Marcellus* but when it was darke night, his minde was racht with exceeding care and veration, and being without any hope of his comming, he was as much grieued how to satisfie *Iabine*, whom hee thought would now suspect him of falsehood: and might suppose hee came not from *Marcellus*. Therefore he said as followeth.

Father, I maruell that I haue not heard from *Marcellus*, according to his promise, which maketh me thinke that some crosse mischance hath hindred him, that may breede in you some misconceit of me, that haue in his name come vnto you, which if you do, you shall much iniurie me: for it was hee that sent mee hither, as I could assure you by diuers probable reasons.

Sir knight (quoth he) I pray be not troubled with any such thoght, for you are welcome to me, though *Marcellus* had not sent you, which I make no doubt of, but so well do I loue him, as that whosoeuer commeth in his name, shall by the strickt obseruance I beare to that name, commaund me any seruice.

Afterwards they went to their repast with such sparing diet as the Priest vsed, and after supper to bedde: where the knight of *Fame* could take no rest at all, but yet lay very quietly, because he was loth to trouble his Host: with which restraint of libertie of speech and other passions that oppresst his sences he indured that tedious night in great torment, which seemed longer then many nights would haue done, if hee might haue had libertie to vtter his lamentations, which boyled in his breast like the violence of a mighte flame pend within a small compasse.

Early the next morning, *Iabine* went forth for to prouide foode, and left the knight of *Fame* alone, who then vttered many complaints, but at last finding fault with himselfe for vsing that effeminate kind of lamentation, he striuing to ouermaister his passions, which the more he

 laboured

laboured to aſſwage the more they increaſed.

In this ſort he continued all that day and the next, and many daies after, ſtill being in good hope of *Marcellus* approach: but when he ſaw ſo long time paſt, and he could heare no newes from him he begunne to accuſe him of diſcourteſie and diſloyaltie, for breaking his promiſe: and withall, grew into a ſetled perſwaſion, that both he and *Angelica* had quite forſaken him: which added griefe to griefe, and more care and veration to his minde, not knowing what to do, nor which way to ſhape his courſe: that arming himſelfe one day, hee mounted himſelfe, and wandred in a melancholly ſtudie towardes the golden Tower, and by chance met with two of *Maximus* knights, who were exceedingly aſtonisht at his ſight, taking him to be a ghoſt: but he drawing nigh to them, they begunne to flee, which hee perceiuing, thought to ſlay the one of them, to haue ſome further ſpeech with him, that charging his launce at him, and hitting him full, ouerthrewe him to the ground: the other being therewith exceedingly terrified, fledde. The Knight of *Fame* alighting, comming to him that he had ouerthrowne, thus ſaid.

Knight, thou needeſt not to haue fledde from me, for I intended thee no harme, but was deſirous to knowe ſome newes of thee, which if thou wilt tell mee, I will let thee depart: otherwiſe thou ſhalt never eſcape my hands. The knight marvelling to heare him ſpeake, whom he thought had beene a ghoſt, made this reply. Pardon me good ſir, for I take you to bee another then I ſee you are, but if I may know what you will commaund me, I will doe it. (Quoth he) tell me how fareth *Marcellus*? Sir (quoth he) at this inſtant he lyeth very weake, by reaſon of many grieuous woundes he receiued not long ſince: where hee declared the whole truth of that which had happened by *Maximus* meanes, ſince which time (quoth hee) the King hath ſet ſuch ſecrete watch about the Tower, that none goeth in nor out without his priuitie.

The Knight of *Fame* having heard his ſpeeches, departed backe to *Iubine*, to whom he declared the truth of all that he had heard, being very ſorry for *Marcellus* hurt, and well working euery circumſtance of that report, thought that when *Marcellus* was gotten with *Angelica* out of the Parke, ſo ſlightly attended it was to come to him: which added ſome comfort to his heart, being fully aſſured thereby, that *Angelica* had not forſaken him.

By

By this time the *Natolian* that escaped from the Knight of *Fame*, was come to the Golden Tower, and comming before the King, told him that hee had met the knight of *Fame*: whereat hee beganne to laugh: but presently came the other, who justified the same words: alledging that it was the knight of *Fame*, and that hee had both talked with him, and knew him, affirming the same most constantly. *Maximus* wondring thereat, was almost astonish' at their words, that hee determined to send all his knights to search for him, and the occasion now most fitly serues: for the Nobles had according to his commaund, gathered a number of forces together, which *Camillus* seing, being unprouided to withstand such force, but comming for another intent, immediately returned with his souldiers towards his countrie, and *Maximus* now seing the coast cleare of enemies, presently sent forth knights euery way to finde the Knight of *Fame*.

Thus newes was come to *Marcellus* and *Angelicas* hearing, which filled their hearts with exceeding care and feare, leaste hee should bee apprehended: this breede new sorrowes in theyr troubled thoughts, but principally in *Angelicas*, whose loue was growen to such perfection, that it was impossible for to remoue the same: that getting to her chamber, shee entred into many heauy complaints, able to haue rent the stonie harts of the cruellest tyrants: whom *Anna* comforted by all meanes shee could deuise: to whom *Angelica* said. Oh *Anna* (quoth shee) little doest thou know the torments my heart doth indure, for wert thou so much inthralled as I am, to so worthy a knight as hee is, thou mightest then haue some inkight into my sorrowes, but being ignorant therein, how canst thou giue me counsell? haue I not cause to sorrow? may rather to remoue mad with sorrow, to see the danger that worthie knight is now in, hauing so lately escaped a most miserable death, by my Fathers censure: and without cause, who not contented therewith, nor satisfied in his minde, hath now sent out many knights to search for him: who if they finde him, will bring him back, or by violence destroy him, whose death shall bee the end of my life: for I haue vowed, if my Father seeke his ruine, hee shall also see my death, for I will not liue one houre after him: in which complaintes shee still continued without intermission.

It fortuned most happily, that *Iulius* was gone forth of S. *Anstines* Chappell, & left the Knight of *Fame* in his Cell, meeting with many of the *Natolian* knights, who demaded if hee saw not such a K. describing

well as they could) the knight of *Fame*, whom he anſwered al after one ſort, that he had not ſeen any ſuch: but marueiling at their earneſt inquirie, he demaunded what that knight might be? One of them tolde him, that he was called the knight of *Fame*, who lately arriued in that countrie, and was kindly entertained by *Maximus*, but eſpecially of *Marcellus*, and hauing in ſome ſort offended the King, was by him afterwards throwen into the Lyons den by reaſon of a letter the king of *Libia* ſent, wherein he accuſed him to haue diſhonoured *Venola* his onely daughter, whom that day was ſeene and ſpoken withall. *Iabine* hearing his ſpeeches, wondred thereat: yet notwithſtanding was carefull leaſt the knight of *Fame* ſhould be found abroad, whom he now beganne greatly to eſteeme, both that he deemed him to be ſprung of royall blood, and alſo for that *Marcellus* made eſtimation of him: who he thought knew him cleare of thoſe accuſations, or elſe he would not haue fauoured him ſo much: that with all ſpeed he haſted to his Cell, where being entred, he found the Knight of *Fame* very ſadde, and faſt bolting the Chappell doore, he came to him, ſaying. Worthie Knight, I am glad that I haue found you here, for were you abroad, there are ſuch a number of Knights in ſearch of you, that it were impoſſible to eſcape them. For me (quoth he) I thinke you are deceiued. Yea (quoth he) if you are called the knight of *Fame*, and lately eſcaped out of the Lyons denne. With that his colour changed. Nay (quoth *Iabine*) feare not, for you ſhall be here as ſafe as your heart can wiſh, for this place is no way ſuſpected, therfore thinke your ſelfe ſecure: then *Iabine* declared vnto him all that had happened, and what he had heard. Whereupon the knight of *Fame* likewiſe finding him faithfull and ſecret, declared vnto him the whole diſcourſe of his trauels, onely leauing out the viſion which appeared to him in *Thrace*. Aſking his counſell what to do, and entring into many ſadde diſcourſes, how he was ſtill croſſed in his expectation: and withall, tolde him that he knew not which way to trauel in ſearch of his Parents, which if he could attaine, then he would not doubt but to reuenge thoſe iniurious wrongs done him. Sir Knight (quoth *Iabine*) I thinke it beſt that you trauell in ſearch of them, and that preſently in the meane time theſe troubles by forgetfulneſſe will be well ouerblowne, and then you may haue the better opportunities to go forwards with any intent you ſhal afterward put in practiſe: for if you ſtay here, you may vnfortunately be deſcried, for the Kings ielouſie is ſuch, that he will leaue no meanes vnattempted to worke your death.

Father

Father (quoth he) your counsell is good, which I will put in practise, not voluntarily, but forced thereto in regarde of mine owne preseruation: requesting this one fauour at your handes, that you woulde by some meanes remember my humble dutie to that honourable knight *Marcellus*: and tell him that it shall not be long ere I returne: desiring him in the meane time (according to his former courtesie, which hath him extended farre beyond my desert) to remaine my friend, and remember me to *Angelica*. I will (quoth *Iabine*) fulfil your request in dutie respect. But first (quoth he) I thinke it most conuenient you change your armor, for that in that you are easily knowne: and I haue one within, that is euery way of as good proofe. The knight of *Fame* liked his deuice exceedingly well, and armed himselfe in that armour, which was very rich and costly, guilded all ouer with Golde and Amell, without any deuise to be knowne by: and in that armor the next night he departed, taking his leaue of olde *Iabine*, with many courtesies, beeing most vnwilling to leaue his companie: and parting with a heauy heart, for that he went to vndertake a newe trauell, which might detaine him long from returning to *Angelica*: and by good fortune, that night he gat out of the countrey, and past the search of the *Natolians*, whom he did not care to meete withall, but that he would not thereby hinder the speede of his iourney.

CHAP. XXI.

How the Knight of Fame arriued in the Countrey of Bohemia, and redeemed Violetta from Archas. How Archas was put to death. How the Knight of Fame came to the knowledge of his Parents, and after that, departed againe towards Natolia.

After that the Knight of *Fame* was past the bounds of *Natolia*, he arriued in an exceeding great plaine, where he saw many readie pathes, but knew not which of them to take: at last a suddaine thought and remembrance of *Parismus* entred his fancie, which so fully possest his minde, that the thought thereof, would by no meanes remoue, which was so effectually wrought in him by a naturall effect: for there were his Parents, and no where else, which caused nature it selfe, to pittie his restlesse Passions, and no longer to procrastinate his

felicitie, that hee fullie and resolutely determined to travell thither.

Whither afterwards with long travell he attained having great desire to see *Parismus* againe, to whom his heart had vowed everlasting friendship. And now drawing nigh the court, in the afternoone when the sunne had with his scorching beames made the season hotte, he heard a grievous complaint, as it seemed to his hearing, of some distressed lady, which made him stay to listen which way that crie came, and by the voyce drawing nigh to the place, he espied under the shadowe of a heape of Elmes, a knight in Armour and a Lady at his feet, who were the same that made that mone. The knight of *Fame* comming neare them they both espied him, to the Ladies comfort: but the knight presently tooke vppe his shield, and addressed himselfe for his defence.

The Knight of *Fame* well noting the Ladies countenance, remembred that he had seene her, but her could not remember where, which caused him the more willinglie to helpe her: being otherwise of his owne vertuous inclination ready to succour any distressed Lady: that comming to her, demanded her cause of sorrow: but she being readie to make him answere, and holding vp her hands to craue his pitie, the other Knight setting his sword against her brest, vowing, that if she spake one word, he would thrust the same through her body: which the knight of *Fame* seeing, thinking he went about to slay her, with his sword drawne, rush' violently against him, and overthrew him: but taking him leaue to recouer his feete, he said: Traiterous villaine, why offerest thou this Lady such discourtesie, being ashamed she should declare thy treachery: which maugre thy hart, I will know before we two part: with that he lent him such a blow, that he made him stagger: the Knight thought himselfe now in worse case then euer he had bene: but notwithstanding, he resisted the knight of *Fame* most courageously for a space, but he being the most gallantest knight in the world, soone brought him in great danger of his life: which when the knight saw and felt, he staied himselfe, and said. Knight, before the combat continue any longer, let me know your name: I will not shew thee that fauour (quoth the knight of *Fame*) but wish thy selfe the: neither will I shew thee that fauour (quoth he) with that he began the combat againe, being scarce able to lift vp his sword, by reason of his faintenesse by effusion of blood, intending to ende his life: which the knight

of

of *Fame* perceiuing, clasped him in his armes, & with violence wrœng his sword out of his hands, and by force made him yeelde, hauing no weapon to offend himselfe nor his aduersary.

The Lady seeing her selfe thus fortunately deliuered, comming to the knight of *Fame*, desired him to pittie her estate, and not to forsake her vntil she were come to the Bohemian court. With that, the knight of *Fame* was exceedingly glad, saying: Lady, I will not forsake you but see you there in safetie, for thither am I bound. But I pray you (quoth he) let me know your name, for that I haue I am sure seene you about the Forrest of *Arde*? *Violetta* with that was drawne into a great admiration what he should be, at last she said: my name is *Violetta*, that am ordained to perpetuall miserie, beeing indeede by the treeherie of a disloyall knight named *Archas*, driuen to wander thitherwards.

The knight of *Fame* then immediately remembring her, but beeing vnwilling to discouer himself, questioned no more with her, but only asked her what that knight was? Sir knight quoth she I know him not, nor why he hath offered me this outrage. Which said the knight of *Fame* forced him to go with them, and so they all departed towards the court, where very soone they arriued. Now it hapned, that *Parismus* at that very instant was in the court, who espying *Violetta* accompanied by two knights, the one of them being greeuously wounded, and as it were by his countenance, and maner of forced comming, seeming captiue to the other, and not knowing of any misaduenture that had befallen her, wondred thereat: and comming to her not wel knowing in what sort to salute those Knights, beeing ignorant of the cause of their cōming, he demāded where she had bin? My Lord (quoth she) this knight, meaning the knight of *Fame*, hath preserued me from the dishonor of this most discourteous knight, intended against me, as I will declare vnto you presently. With that *Parismus* most kindly embraced the knight of *Fame*, departing altogither into the presence, where was the king & queene, *Pollipus*, *Laurana*, and many others. *Pollipus* seeing *Violetta* amongst those strange knights, maruelled thereat, but she cōming before the king, vpon her knes desired iustice against the wounded knight: the king told her that she should haue iustice. *Violetta* then said, as followeth. Most mightie king, I beseech you regard my complaint, reueng the monstrous wrong don me by this most wicked and abhominable homicide, who hath offred monstrous outrage: for this

afternoone, attended by my damozell, I went forth of the court into the groue adioyning to the garden, to recreate my ſelfe in the coly shade: where I had not long ſtayed, but this diſcourteous Villaine ſurpriſed me, and caught hold of my damzel, who made great exclamation, fearing my harme, whome he bound both hand and foote: threatning if ſhe made any noyſe, to murther her. Which done, he toke me by violence, and halling and pulling me moſt rudely and diſcourteouſly, would haue conueyed me I know not whither, vntill this valiant Knight by good fortune, hearing my complaints, redeemed me from his tyrannie. The King hearing her ſpeeches, commanded the knight to diſcouer himſelfe, but he being exceedingly aſhamed, and loath to be knowne, refuſed the ſame: but at laſt, by ſome of the Bohemian Knights was vnarmed, when preſently *Violetta* knew him, wherewith ſhe gaue an exceeding ſtart, as if ſhe had beene affrighted at his ſight. *Pariſmus* and *Polliphus* likewiſe knew him, certifieing the King, that it was *Archas*, that had before offered the like villanie to *Violetta*, which the King well remembred.

Then he ſaid: Cruell tyrant, what excuſe canſt thou inuent to ſhelter this villanie? what canſt thou alleage in thy defence, but that thou oughteſt to ſuffer the moſt reproachful death that can be inuented? but this cenſure will I giue of thee, not to fauour thee, but to deale iuſtlie with that Knight, whoſe Priſoner thou arte, and therefore, as hee by right hath conquered thee, ſo wee will that he ſhall be thy iudge.

The Knight of *Fame* had all this while diligently beheld *Laurana*es beawtie, her countenance, and euery part of her behauiour, that he toke great delight in beholding her, but hearing the kings ſpeech he vnarmed his head: whom *Pariſmus* ſone knew, and moſt louingly embraced: like wiſe *Pollipus* and *Violetta* knowing him, ſaluted him with many curteſies: when preſently *Pariſmus* declared vnto his father, that it was the famous knight that was called the Knight of *Fame*.

The King hearing that it was he, of whome he had heard ſomany honourable reports, roſe from his Kingly ſeat, and embraced him moſt louingly: and euery one in generall, ſeemed to be moſt exceedingly delighted with his preſence.

Laurana beholding his countenance, felt an exceeding throbbing ſuddainly poſſeſſe her heart: withall, ſuch a violent blaſhing flaſht in

her

her face, that shee wondred whence such suddain motions should proceede, and was constrained to turne aside, least any should perceiue her chaunging countenance, and withdrew herselfe to a windowe. This alteration being wrought in her by a naturall instinct, which shee was altogether ignorant of.

The knight of *Fame* not vnmindfull to satisfie *Violettas* wrong, by some reuenge against *Archas*, most humbly thankt the King for honouring him so much, by giuing him authoritie to giue his doome: but (quoth hee) I most humblie intreat your Highnesse to pardon mee, and desire your wisedome, to whom he hath beene offensiue, to vse him as you please: for it were great presumption for mee, in this strange place to censure of him in your Maiesties presence.

Then the king called *Archas*, commaunding him to declare what moued him to commit that outrage to *Violetta*: but hee assuring himselfe of no lesse then death, would make no aunswere: whereuppon the King commaunding him to bee had to prison, appoynted that the next day hee should lose his head, which was accordingly performed: who might peraduenture haue beene pardoned, but that his own conscience accused him more then those whom hee had offended. And so according to his owne folly, which had brought him to commit those wicked acts, euen so hee was his owne Iudge: for that his guiltie conscience would not suffer him to aske pardon. After this iudgement giuen, euery mans minde was in quiet, hauing sufficiently scanned the circumstance of *Violettas* misfortune.

The Knight of *Fame* was royallie entertained, and honourablie feasted by the king of *Bohemia*, but especially *Parisмus* and *Laurana*, vsed him with exceeding kindenesse, being for that night driuen to part from him without any conference. But *Laurana* was so exceedingly troubled with his remembrance, that she could scarce take any rest at all that night, for thinking on him, not knowing what should moue her to such vnwonted alteration, that in the morning when *Parisмus* and shee were in some conference about the Knight of *Fame*, shee said. My Lord, I know not why I should moue mee to thinke any such thought, but I am perswaded, that his arriuall will bring vs either some vnexpected ioy or suddaine sorrow: for since I first saw him, my heart hath neuer beene quiet: neither can I, though I striue to the contrarie, once put his remembrance out of my minde, which hath so fully possest my fancie, that I could take no rest this night.

My selfe (quoth *Parismus*) haue felt the selfe same Passion, not onely now, but also at my first meeting with him in the Forrest of *Arde*: which maketh me partly of the selfe same opinion with you, and also desirous to knowe of whence hee is. In this and such like communication they continued some time, till *Parismus* left her, and went to the Knight of *Fame*, who was alreadie in companie of *Pollipus*, whome *Parismus* most kindely vsed, and afterwardes beeing at a most Royall Feast, which was prepared onely for his more honourable welcome: after dinner beeing requested by *Parismus* (who was desirous to know of whence hee was) there being the King and Queene, *Parismus*, *Laurana*, *Pollipus*, and *Violetta*, and diuers others, hee beganne to declare the whole discourse of his trauells to them in this sort. If I should declare my name and byrth (quoth hee) I know not how to beginne: for that I my selfe am ignorant thereof: but so much as I can remember, I will hide no part from you. I was brought vp in a countrie in *Tartaria*, called the Iland of *Rockes*, my Parents for any thing I know, being poore, or whether they were or no, I know not, but when I was of some remembrance, either my mother that brought me vp, or rather my nurse (for she would not suffer me to call her mother) departed from her habitation, I know not with what intent, but by the way a Lyon slew her, whom I pursued to his deune: where being come, I could not returne back to my nurse, by which means I stayed in that place many yeares, vntill on a time, shee appeared vnto mee in a dreame, warning mee to forsake that vnfrequented place, and goe to the Castle of *Rockes*, which I presently did, then not knowing what a Castle meant: where at the first I was roughly handled, but at last I was kindely vsed by *Tyresius*, who brought me vp a long time, with whom I departed to Sea: where by a mighty tempest, the shippe and all that were in the same were cast away, my selfe onely was cast on the shore in *Thrace*: where I was succoured by the good Duke *Amasenus*, in whose Court I was often like to be destroyed, by some of his Knights that enuied mee: from whence I departed to the Kings Court, hearing of a generall triumph that was helde: the kings Daughter beeing appoynted the conquerours rewarde: whome I wanne, and was determined to haue married: from which I was warned of by a vision, which willed mee to surrender my title in *Physena*, to *Remulus*, to whom shee was before betrothed: which I did, and also that I should

trauell

trauell in search of my Parents, which the vision told me were of kingly race: and withall, gaue me another commaund, that I should loue no Lady, vntill I had found out that Lady that was shewne me in the vision: this did greatly trouble me when presently came newes of *Tyrries* death, sonne to Duke *Amalenus*, who was slaine by *Brandamor* in rescue of *Venola*, whom he had the custodie of: vpon which occasion I trauelled first to *Libia*, and from thence to the Court of *Arde*, thinking *Venola* had beene the same Lady appeared to me in the vision, where I met with your Highnesse, and with you departed to the Court of the king of *Libia*, after *Venola* was redeemed, as your selfe remember, who was not the Lady I went in search of. Afterwards when I had thought to haue departed with you towards this countrie, *Venola* by subtilitie causing me to take a stapie potion, frustrated my desire, which shee did to stay me with her vpon a pretence of great loue she bare me, which one afterwards made me acquainted withall: which when I heard, being inioyned to place my affections on another, fearing some mischance might arise by her loue, and finding out with what deuice they had frustrated me of your company, I departed without knowledge of any from thence: and at last after long trauell, arriued in *Norana*, where lying downe to rest my selfe being weerie, it happened the Lady *Angelica* (the most fairest Lady liuing) to passe by, whom after I had seene, I presently knewe to be the Lady that appeared to me in the vision, hauing after such good successe, that I was entertained by *Maximus* the King, at the golden Tower, and there grewe into great acquaintance with *Marcellus*. I had not long remained there, but the king of *Libia* (as I suppose, perswaded thereto by *Venolas* meanes) wrote a letter vnto *Maximus* that he would for his sake either send me to him, or else be reuenged on me by my death: alleadging that I had dishonoured his daughter: which accusation was most false and vntrue. Hereupon the King without hearing what I could say in mine owne defence, immediately cast me into a denne of fearce Lyons, who refused to hurt me, where I remained many dayes, hauing no other food but such as was cast to them: from whence afterwards I escaped by the Keepers meanes, whom I compelled to send for *Marcellus*, who rid me out of the Tower, and sent me to an auncient friend of his named *Iabin*, a Priest of Saint *Austines* Chappell, promising to come to me the next day, but was disappointed thereof by such meanes as is not yet come to my knowledge.

Upon a day I went abroad from the Chappel and by miſfortune was eſpied by ſome of the Kings Knights, who certified him, (as I thinke that I was alive: whereupon he againe moſt vniuſtly ſought my life,) and ſent out thouſands in my ſearch: from whoſe hands I eſcaped intending to finde my Parents, and ſo trauelled hitherwards. This (quoth he) is the briefe and true rehearſall of my trauels and bringing vp, ſo far as I know: hauing nothing wherby to be otherwiſe known, but a Iewell which my nurſe gaue me great charge to keepe, whoſe minde I haue fulfilled. With that, he pold out of his boſome the iewel, which he continually woze about his neck, which *Laurana* hauing diligently viewed, perfectly knew to be the ſame ſhe had left with *Pariſmenos*, in the Iland of *Rocks*, whō ſhe aſſuredly (both by that & many other probabilities) knewe to be her ſonne, that ſuddainly before them all, ſhe caught him in her armes and cried. Oh my ſonne *Pariſmenos*, thou art my ſonne: many times kiſſing and embracing him. Her ſtrainge behauiour draue them all in admiration. When ſuddainly the place where they were beganne to ware darke, that they coulde ſcarce ſee one another, and they hard a voyce, which they knewe not from whence it ſhould come, which ſaide. *Pariſmus* welcome thy ſon *Pariſmenos*, long time abſent from thee: thou needeſt not doubt of it, for none is ſo like thee in heroicall qualities: which ſaide, the darkeneſſe preſently vaniſhed.

By this they all aſſuredly knewe that the Knight of *Fame* was ſon to *Pariſmus* and *Laurana*, who likewiſe aſſured himſelfe that he had found his Parents: that preſently he kneeled downe, whom *Pariſmus*, the King, the Queene, and *Laurana*, moſt louingly all at once incompaſſed with their kinde embracings, reioycing moſt exceedingly for ioy that he was found: being vnable by woꝛdes, welcomes, embracings, oꝛ otherwiſe, to expreſſe their gladneſſe. *Pariſmus* reioycing that he had ſo valiant and vertuous a ſonne, the king and Queen glad that in their old age they ſawe ſo vertuous an impe ſpring forth of their ſtocke to ſucceede in the kingdome. And *Laurana* with teares of ioy expreſſing her content, in that ſhe had found her ſon whom ſhe thought had been deſtroyed long ago: that no hart is able to expreſſe the ioy that poſſeſt their hearts. *Polipus* and *Violetta* they likewiſe embraced him, being as glad as any of the reſt of his kinſfolke. This newes was ſoone ſpred through the whole Court, from thence, flying fame ſone brought the knowledge thereof to the Citizens, who of their owne accoꝛd, ruing

their

their bels,made bonfiers & triumphs,through the whole citie.where on all ſides, was ſuch exceeding reioycings,as is impoſſible to be expreſt.

Many dates afterwards,the Knight of *Fame* who now ſhall aſſume his right and proper name *Pariſmenos*, continued in the Bohemian Court,honourably entertained,and highly eſteemed of the Bohemian States: who grew into exceeding loue towards him, and was kindly beloued of the King and Queene, but eſpecially of his parents, who thought themſelues moſt happie and bleſſed to haue ſuch a ſonne: whoſe fame was ſpread through moſt places of all the World,and that euery mans eares were filled with the report of his moſt honourable deedes.

Now that *Pariſmenos* had thus happily attained the knowledge of his parents,the want whereof had long time filled his minde with care, no other thought but of *Angelicas* loue could take place in his heart,which(though his cauſe of ioy otherwiſe was ſufficient)filled his ſences with ſadneſſe,and quite extinguiſht thoſe delights that they ſeemed to his troubled mind,rather tedious then comfortable:adding no eaſe to his care, which were augmented to an exceeding heigth, by reaſon of *Maximus* crueltie,which he ſaiwe was ſo much aggrauated againſt him, that he knewe it a thing impoſſible for him to attaine the leaſt fauour at his hands: who likewiſe kept *Angelica* guarded ſo ſtrongly and ſo narrowly pried into all her actions, that it was impoſſible any way,either to come to her ſpeech,or to ſend to her:that with diuerſitie of the cogitations,his heart was tormented his countenance darkened,and he ſpent his time moſt commonly in ſadneſſe:being ſeldome drawne to any mirth,which was generally noted of all men:but eſpecially of *Laurana*,who could neuer be quiet but euelyn his company.

And on a day miſſing him, ſhe reſted not vntill ſhe had found him out,being gotten into the moſt ſollitary place in the garde leaning himſelfe vpon his elbow: who eſpying her,raiſed himſelf from the ground, bluſhing at her preſence,to whom ſhe ſaid.

Why how now *Pariſmenos*, what ſadneſſe is that which poſſeſſeth your mind,that maketh you eſtrange your ſelfe from company,to delight in ſollitarineſſe? is there none ſo highly in your fauour, that they may know the truth thereof? or is your cauſe of care ſuch,as none can remedie?or not counſel you for your eaſe?I am ſure there are many would not refuſe to bie their endeuours to pleaſure you, eſpecially my

my ſelf would both willingly do my beſt to comfort you, and know the cauſe, if it be not too ſecret.

Pariſmenos with humble reuerence made her this anſwere: I beſeech you do not thinke me ſo vnduteſull: nay my cauſe of care is ſecret, that I would conceale the ſame from you: but were it of much more importance, I would willingly reueale it to ſatiſfie your minde: which I haue omitted, as vnwilling to trouble you therwith, and for no other reſpect.

Then I pray (quoth ſhe) let me knowe, is it not loue? yes moſt deare mother (quoth he) it is loue, and to that beautiful Lady *Angelica*, who beareth me the like affection: but ſo farre am I from enioying her loue, as that it attainteth my heart with care to thinke thereof, which is the cauſe of my ſadneſſe: which will encreaſe rather then diminiſh, if I do not ſhortly trauel thither, being now aſſured of all other doubts, and hauing finiſhed my trauell in ſearch to finde you out. Therefore, I moſt humbly beſeech you to procure my Lord and fathers conſent to my ſpeedie departure, for without the ſruition of her heauenly ſight, my life will be but wearieſome. *Laurana* hearing his ſpeeches, perceiued indeed, that his affection was great, and therefore not to be remoued, and well knowing by her owne former experience, that loue was incurable, ſhe was the more ready to pitie his paſſions, that ſhe promiſed to further him in what ſhe could, hauing now aſſured of the cauſe of his ſadneſſe.

CHAP. XXII.

How Pariſmenos after the knowledge of his parents, departed towards Natolia. How hee met with Marcellus: and what afterwards befell to him.

WIthin ſeue daies after, *Pariſmenos* returned againe towards *Natolia* but with much ſorrow in the Bohemian court for his departure) ſpending much time in trauell, vntill he arriued at S. *Auſtins* Chappell, hauing gotten him other armour, becauſe he would not be knowne: and knocking at the Chappell doore, preſently one *Iabin* came out, to whom he diſcouered himſelfe: who knowing him, reioyced exceedingly, at his preſence and ſafetie, deſiring him to come in, for that he had newes of importance to tell him.

Pariſmenos

Parismenos comming to him for no other intent, but to heare newes from *Angelica*, willingly went in with him. And *Iubin* began as followeth. Most noble knight I will declare vnto you all that I haue learned of the estate of *Marcellus*, so neare as I can. After that you were departed from hence, the *Natolians* hauing continued their diligent search some three dayes, in the end returned to the Court, frustrate of their desire: whereby *Maximus* gaue no credence to that report, but some forgot the same, remaining in great quiet.

Marcellus by this time had recouered his health, letting passe no time, came hither, thinking to haue found you here, but hearing of your report of your departure, he seemed to be quite ouercome with griefe, and declared vnto me all that had happened to you in the Golden Tower, which you had declared vnto me before: and withall manifested what had happened vnto him and *Angelica*, and how he was so grieuously wounded: then *Iubin* declared the same, euen as *Marcellus* had tolde him, in the very same manner as is before declared, when he determined to haue conueyed *Angelica* to S. *Anfius* chappell, the day his Father was on hunting. And quoth he *Marcellus* hauing tolde me this, withall shewed me with what sorrow *Angelica* endured your absence.

Parismenos hauing heard his wordes, which yelded him full assurance of *Marcellus* friendship, and *Angelicas* constant loue, was therewith exceedingly comforted, rehearsing to him, how fortunately he had found his Parents.

Iubin then began to vse him with more reuerence, and more frequently to affect his company and good, that at *Parismenos* request, he went towardes the Golden Tower, to see if he could by any meanes speake with *Marcellus*, which he willingly at his request did, and brought newes backe, that *Maximus* was departed with the Queene, *Marcellus* and *Angelica* towards the Cittie of *Ephesus*: which he learned of such as were gardians at the Golden Tower.

Parismenos hearing that, immediately departed thitherwards, and entring the Cittie, rode presently into the Court, where he met a Knight, whome he desired of courtesie to certifie *Marcellus* that there was a Knight who would speake with him: which at his request, he presently went and performed; and finding *Marcellus* in the kings great hall, he told him there was a straunge knight at the Court

gate

gate that was deſirous to ſpeake with him.

Marcellus marvelling who it ſhould bee, immediately went out vnto him, being a Knight of exceeding vertue, that hee would not refuſe any courteſie, and though hee were ſonne vnto a mightie King, yet hee diſdained not to fulfil his requeſt, though hee neither knew him, nor the cauſe of his comming.

Pariſmenos beholding him, immediately alighted from his ſteed, and with a kinde behaviour ſaid; Moſt noble and courteous Prince, I deſire to haue ſome few words in priuate conference with you, from the knight of *Fame*. *Marcellus* hearing him name the knight of *Fame*, deſired him to ſay on: for there were none then preſent, but ſuch as hee truſted.

My Lorde (quoth *Pariſmenos*) becauſe I knowe not whether I may diſcouer my ſelfe or no with ſafetie, I am the knight of *Fame*, and now altered in name, but not in good will to you. *Marcellus* hearing his wordes, had much adoo to refraine from embracing him: but yet for that hee would not haue any note the ſame, hee abſtained: but ſaid; Moſt noble knight, nothing could haue brought that ioye to my heart, your preſence doth, being a long time ſeuered from you by Fortunes inconſtant mutabilitie, who altereth the eſtate of things, according to her variable diſpoſition: truſting you haue not miſdoubted of my good will, though I came not to S. *Auſtins* Chappell according to my promiſe: which I was about to performe, but that my intent was croſt. But ſeeing you are thus happily returned, and haue as I hope, attained the knowledge of your parents, in whoſe ſearch olde *Iabine* tolde mee you were departed, I deſire you repoſe that aſſured confidence in my truſtineſſe, that I will labour to procure your content euery way to my vttermoſt power: your ſafetie and returne, will bring no little ioy to my Siſter *Angelica*, which is impoſſible to giue her knowledge of: for my father hath now garded her more ſtrictly then euer before: neither is ſhee here in this Court as the common report goeth, but ſtill remaineth in the Golden Tower, which I will declare to you hereafter. In the meane time, becauſe you ſhall not bee deſcride, I will ſend my Eſquyre with you vnto an auncient Ladies houſe of good eſtimation, where you ſhall bee kindly entertained for my ſake, whether I will repaire vnto you: where you ſhall, if ſo pleaſe you ſtaye, vntill I can worke ſome meanes how to bring you, that you may ſpeake with my Siſter *Angelica*.

Pariſmenos

Pariſmenos hearing his courteous ſpeeches, yeelded him moſt hartie thanks: and ſo for that *Marcellus* was fearfull of his Fathers ſuſpition, without any more ſpeeches, hee ſent *Pariſmenos* with the Squyre vnto the Ladies houſe, whoſe name was Madame *Panora*: who taking *Pariſmenos* by the hand, conducted him in, and vſed him moſte kindely.

After dinner was paſt, *Marcellus* came thither to him, thanking *Panora* for entertaining his friend: then hee moſt louingly embraced *Pariſmenos* (who by reaſon of his long trauell, and exceeding cares, was ſo much altered, that had *Marcellus* met him in the ſtreetes, without anie former knowledge that it was hee, hee would hardlie haue knowen him) who with the like behauiour greeted him againe: declaring to him his whole trauelles in ſearch of his Parents. *Marcellus* hearing that hee was Sonne vnto the moſt noble Princes *Pariſmus* and *Laurana*, heyres of the two famous Kingdomes of *Theſſalie* and *Bohemia*, ſaid. Moſt noble Knight, how miſerable [illegible]ld *Natolia* haue bene eſteemed, if it had beene the deſtruction of ſo honourable blood, and what cruelty might haue been imputed to my Father, to haue giuen you the ſentence of your death? how vnfortunate had our blood been, in miſſing to be affianced to ſo honourable and Kingly houſes? but notwithſtanding all this, my Father ſo much ouerburdened with conceit, regardeth no ſuch honour, but rather diſhonoureth his houſe and ſtocke with his fearefull ſuſpect, who ſince your departure from the Mayden Tower, greiue into ſuch furious conceit of *Angelica*, that euery day hee was in a manner her keeper, and in the night he cauſed her to lodge in his owne chamber, the doores wherof hee would locke with his owne hands, and keepe the keyes, which was procured by the vaine ſurmiſe of a dreame, wherein hee dreampt that *Angelica* ſhould be ſtolne from him: this miſerable life continued not many daies (which well I may terme moſt miſerable, being intangled with ſo many cares as I knowe poſſeſſe his heart) till at the laſt hee wrought this deuiſe, thinking vnder that to eaſe his cares, and preuent all thoſe miſchiefes which hee feared: hee gaue out ſpeeches many dayes before hee came to the Golden Tower, that hee would depart to this Cittie: and withall, it was reported in euery mans voyce, that *Angelica* ſhould no more be kept in that Tower, but that ſhee ſhould likewiſe departe with him, which all the Nobles and Lords of the land were glad of: the

knights and Ladies her attendants reioyced thereat, and the Fame thereof was soone spred through the hearing of bordering Nations and from thence to farre countries, my self amongst the rest was exceedinglie glad, especially *Angelica* most of all reioyced therat. Now my Father seeing the ioye that was made thereat, was the more troubled in his sences, that comming to a Damozell of meane birth, yet of much beautie, who in contenance much resembled *Angelica*, hee wonne her by (many protestations of great preferrement, and with many threates of great seueritie, if shee would not condiscend to follow his counsell) to do whatsoeuer he commaunded her: her did hee cause to come into his own chamber, and secretly (without the priuity of any but the Queene) to attyre herselfe in *Angelicas* richest ornaments, appoynting certaine Damozells to attend her, that knew not *Angelica*: or at least knew her not from *Angelica*.

As for *Angelica*, the very same day, when he meant to depart, hee committed her to the custodie of foure Eunuches: who vowed not to let any come eyther to the sight of her, or speech of her, wout he brought my Fathers letter to that effect, signed with his owne hand and signet, remooing all her former gardians, and appointing newe that knew nothing, but that *Angelica* was departed with the King, from whose knowledge likewise hee had giuen the Eunuches especiall charge, to keepe her being there.

All the Ladies likewise that attended her, came away with him, knowing no other but that *Angelica* was in his companie, leauing no other to attend her, but one Damzell, named *Anna*, which she obtained of my Father, with many instant intreaties. And hauing effected euerie thing according to his fancie, hee departed hitherwerds: the Damozell so artificially behauing her selfe, that neither my selfe nor any other perceyued but that it was *Angelica* indeede. And beeing arryued in this place, hee committed this supposed *Angelica* to such strickt custodie, as before hee vsed, committing her to be kept by those Damozells that indeede thought it had beene *Angelica*, whome hee bound by manie promises, not to suffer any to come to her speeche. But I longing to haue some conference with my Sister, whose heart I knew was oppressed with manie cares for your absence, sought meanes to come to her speeche, which I was long without obtaining: but at last by meanes of one of the Damozells, whom with many intreaties, I had

wonne

wonne, I came to her, and taking her by the hand, I began to vſe many ſpeeches to comfort her: and withall, to enter into ſuch conference, as would haue bewrayed all the ſecrets that euer had paſſed betwixt me, *Angelica*, and your ſelfe: but the Damozel bearing a vertuous minde, and vnwilling (as ſhe afterwardes tolde mee) to betray my ſecrets to her priuitie (which coulde not proceede but from a marueilous good diſpoſition) ſuddainly brake off my ſpeaches, ſaying.

My Lord, I beſeech you be aduiſed to whome you ſpeake, vnleſſe you will commit your ſecrets to one that you woulde not otherwiſe truſt, neither will I preſume (being vnworthie thereof) to participate your counſels: for I am not *Angelica*, but your poore handmaide *Dulcia*. At which words I was halfe aſtoniſht, and viewing her indeed perfectly knew her: which without ſhe had betrayed her ſelfe, I ſhould neuer haue done: withall my fancie began inwardly to commend her curteſie, or rather vertue, that refuſed (though ſhe condiſcended to my fathers will) to betray mee, knowing the whole depth of my ſecrets: and wondring how mine eyes were blinded, that coulde before diſcerne her, I requeſted her to tell me the occaſion why ſhe ſupplied *Angelica's* roome, the truth whereof ſhe declared vnto mee, in manner as I haue now tolde you: withall, requeſting mee vppon her knees, not to reueale that which ſhee hadde of duke, good will and affection tolde mee: which I promiſed I would, and meane faithfully to concelae from all but your ſelfe. Now there reſteth nothing but how to worke meanes that you may come to *Angelica*.

Pariſmenos hearing howe ſtrictly his Lady was guarded, was ſuddainly ſtricken with ſilent ſadneſſe, to thinke of the impoſſibilities that hindred his content, and his minde was ſo oppreſt with care, that hee forgot how to ſtudie for his owne auaile.

Marcellus ſeeing him falne into that heauie dumpe, reuiued him from the ſame with this comfortable ſpeech: My deare friend abandon this habit of care, and reuiue your drouping hart with hopeful comfort, for my ſelfe will worke a meanes how you ſhall haue the cuſtodie of *Angelica*, which I will effect very ſpeedily, if you will ſtay here but while I can bring the ſame about. *Pariſmenos* being comforted with his curteous promiſe, gaue him thankes in theſe ſpeeches.

Most noble Knight, how may I expresse sufficient thankes to you, for becomming so kinde and faithfull a friend to me vnworthie: for which way may I recompence the least of your good deeds, that haue in all abundance tasted of your honourable bountie: for which I render you thanks, as all the recompence I am able to make: vowing if euer you neede my helpe in any thing, neuer to desist to hazard my life for your sake. And since you haue of your own vertuous disposition voluntarily (neither drawne by intreatie nor hope of recompence) promised me your assistance, which onely may be the meane to worke my euerlasting felicity, I beseech you goe forwards therein, that I may thereby bee much more indebted, as well for that, as for infinite other your Princely courtesies: which though they passe vnrewarded, yet they shall neuer rest vngratified in my dutifull deuotions, which by good right are eternally bound to requite your good will.

Worthy friend (quoth *Marcellus*) leaue off so to vse such thankes to mee, that request nothing at your hands but loue and friendeship, which am vnable to merit any such recompence as you kindly yeelde: but I pray be you merrie yet in my absence, with this kinde olde Ladie, whilest I put my purpose in practise, which so soone as I haue brought to perfection, I will returne, and not before: till when, I take my leaue, committing you to your owne hearts desire, which I wish. Which words being ended, with many courteous farewels he departed the chamber: and comming to *Panora*, (who before had beene his Nurse, and loued him most dearely) whom he requested in most earnest sort, to vse his friend as kindly as she would vse himselfe, who promised so to do: and likewise performed it in euer vsing *Parismenos* so kindly, that hee could not chuse but greatly to ettoll and commend her courtesie.

Now let my muse returne to speake somewhat of *Angelica*, who after she sawe that she was frustrated of her desire, which was to depart with the King, according as himselfe had giuen out speeches, and not to be any longer inthralled as she had of long time before been, and now perceiuing that her father had both deceiued her in that, taken away all her damzels, chaunged her guard, and appointed her to bee guarded by such iealous slaues, as would neuer scarce day nor night suffer her to be out of their sight, thought her selfe not onely in as bad case as before, but rather in a thousand times worse, being depriued of many pleasures which she enioyed: but neuer esteemed of them, vntil

now

now ſhe was reſtrained, miſſing the comfortable preſence and ſweet conference ſhe was wont to enioy with *Marcellus*, and eſpecially fearing neuer to ſee the Knight of *Fame* again, ſhe wholly gaue her mind to ſorrowe, ſpendingall her time commonly in teares and bewailing her ſad eſtate that had not *Anna* in ſome meaſure comforted her, ſhe would haue ouerwhelmed her tender heart with thoſe cares, and haue ſhortned the date of her precious life, thinking euery houre a day, and euery day a yeare, till ſhe were releaſed from that bondage: in which carefull eſtate ſhe continually remained.

CHAP. XXIII.

How the Knight of Fame carried Angelica from the golden Tower, to Iabines Chappell.

AS ſoone as *Maximus* was come to the Court, hée preſently got himſelf to his chamber, and there began to ſtudie how to compaſſe that which hee had vndertaken to effect: at laſt he bethought himſelfe, that if he could deuiſe any meanes to get his fathers Signet, hee would write a letter vnto the keepers of the Maiden Tower, in the behalfe of *Pariſmenos*, that they ſhouldadmit him as one of the Gardiants which preſently he contriued in this ſort.

THis truſtie knight, on whoſe fidelitie I repoſe my confidence, I haue choſen and appointed to be one of your fellowes, and to that effect I haue ſent him to you with this letter, ſigned by my ſelfe: whom I require you to admit without any denial, and keepe this as your warrant to doe the ſame.

Maximus.

When *Marcellus* had wrote this letter, and immitated therein ſo neare as he could his fathers hand, which hee knewe they were not greatly acquainted withall, he wrought ſuch meanes that hee gate *Maximus* ſignet and ſealed the ſame: which when he had ſigned the next morning he went to *Pariſmenos* and told him what he had done:

who liked thereof very well, and (quoth he) if I may once be admitted amongſt them, let me alone with the Eunuches to come to *Angelica*, neither will I be denied, ſince I haue this good meanes: that preſently he armed himſelf, for that he would not vſe any, not the leaſt which oftentimes bringeth things well begunne to an vntoward end: and taking his leaue of *Marcellus* and the Lady *Panora*, with abundance of heartie thankes, he departed with a merrie heart towards the maiden Tower, hoping now to enioy the ſweet ſight of his beloued, which hee neuer beheld but twiſe in all the time he had ſought her loue. *Marcellus* he departed backe againe to the court very ſadde, for the abſence of *Pariſmenos* and *Angelica*, being likewiſe much greeued, that *Maximus* his father ſhould withhold any of his ſecrets from him, which did both diſgrace him to ſuch as were ſtrangers, and eſpecially to thoſe Ladies that were *Dulcias* attendants, which though he knew well inough, yet that tooke away no part of his conceit of vnkindneſſe: but moſt of all he was troubled with griefe to be reſtrained from *Dulcias* company, on whom his thoughts had continually run, euer ſince he had bin laſt with her, for her bewtie excelled all the Ladies of the court (*Angelica* excepted) & of her vertue he had good conceit, by that which he had found in her good diſpoſitions, when ſhe refuſed to thruſt her ſelfe into the knowledge of his ſecrets, but rather committed all that the King had commaunded her to his ſecrecie, which if *Maximus* ſhould know of, would be as much as her life were worth. Theſe cogitations ſo much altered his countenance, that whereas before hee was of a pleaſant diſpoſition, he now began to giue his minde wholely to melancholy ſadneſſe, often ſhunning the company of thoſe he was wont to delight in, which *Maximus* noted, eſpecially the Queene both marueiled and was greeued thereat, and finding him out when hee was in that heauie vaine, ſhe earneſtly demaunded his cauſe of ſadneſſe, to whom he made this anſwere. My father, I know not vpon what occaſion accounteth me I thinke, rather as one that would betray him, then as his ſonne, that he reſtraineth me *Angelicas* preſence, and keepeth his counſels from me: to intrude my ſelfe into his counſels, I will not preſume: onely my deſire is, that I may but be admitted to the ſight of my ſiſter *Angelica*.

Marcellus (quoth the Queene) I pray thee bee contented for a time, for thou ſeeſt thy fathers minde, which will impart his ſecrets to

none,

none, who if hee should knowe that your sadnesse were for that cause, would be the more fearefull to imparte them to you, which can no way pleasure you, but rather fill your minde with greater cares, which now is more happy then it would be then: for *Angelica* so long as shee is in health, what neede you be so carefull for her: then good *Marcellus* rest your selfe contented, and desire not that which will rather adde more trouble to your head. The Queene having ended these speeches, departed, and left *Marcellus* where shee found him.

Assone as the Queene was gone, hee began againe to ponder these things, not knowing why his head should be thus troubled: for he knew all that hee desired, and yet his minde was troubled therewith, that at last, with more advised consideration, hee weighed every conceit of his thoughts, and found that neyther his Fathers unkindnesse, *Angelicaes* absence, nor his feare of disgrace, was ther that troubled him, but only a good concept of *Dulcias* kindenesse, which caused him to enter into a viewe of her perfections, which his fancie began so much to commend her, that hee thought her worthy to bee beloued: Withall, thought why he might not loue her, which very thoghts drew to such insight into his owne fancies, that he perceyued that loue had alreadie taken possession in his heart: then hee began to consider what displeasure it might procure him, if he should set his fancie on one so farre his inferior, and not rather seeke the loue of some Kings daughter, that might adde honor to his title, and not diminish the same: which thought was no sooner begun, but it ended, being dasht by an other concept, that *Dulcia* was as beautifull as any, as vertuous as any, as courteous as any: and therefore as worthy to be beloued as any: that if hee should marry with his equall, she might rather marrie him for his dignitie, and of a haughtie minde to keepe her owne high dignitie still, then for any true loue: and if she were his equall, hee should rather be subiect to her will, then shee any way obedient to him: that *Dulcia* would bee a louing, kinde, and duetifull wife, that shee would honour him, rather then desire to bee his equall, and that shee would refuse no perrill, daunger, nor hazarde for his sake: that having spent some time in these cogitations, hee resolued to loue *Dulcia* whatsoeuer ensued thereon: though hee incurred his Parents displeasure, or anie other hazard of his honour whatsoeuer: and with resolution, hee went immediately vnto the place where shee

was

was guarded in ſtéed of *Angelica*, and by the Damzells meanes, who before had done him the like fauour, he came to her chamber, where he found *Dulcia* all alone very ſad, to whom he ſaid, How now *Angelica*, what are you ſadde? can I neuer come, but that I muſt alwayes finde you in this melancholy diſpoſition? what, are you ſorry to be thus pend from a huſband?

My Lorde (quoth *Dulcia*) though I am otherwiſe ſadde, it doth mee good to ſée you merrie. You are deceyued *Dulcia*, I am not merrie. My Lorde (quoth ſhee) if I ſhould giue credite to your wordes, they ſhewe that you are merrie, that call me *Angelica*, yet knowe the contrarie. Oh *Dulcia* (quoth he) neither doth wordes nor countenance alwayes bewray the inward thoughts: for this which you take to bée myrth in mée, is but a forced habite, which I haue taken vppon mee euen now: but knewe you the thoughts of my heart, you would ſay I were ſadde.

My Lord (quoth ſhée) I beſeech you pardon my boldeneſſe, which I preſumed, ſeing your pleaſant diſpoſition, wherein if I was deceyued, I hope you will not bee offended with: for indéed oftentimes the heart meditates of many things, the mind cannot vtter. So doth mine *Dulcia* (quoth hée) for I wiſh thée more good, then I am able to vtter: and the cauſe that my heart is ſadde, is becauſe I am not able to do thée ſo much good, as my heart doth wiſh and cannot vtter. I moſt humbly thanke you (quoth *Dulcia*) acknowledging my ſelfe farre vnworthie ſuch fauour, and vnable to deſerue ſuch good, which maketh mee thinke you ſtill continue in that forced habit, which maketh you vtter thoſe ſpeeches. Indéede well replyed *Dulcia* (quoth he) but as I ſuddainly take that habit vpon me, it was gone again before I had vttered the wordes: therfore you may bée aſſured now, that my wordes proceéde from a true heart, and not from a forced habit. My Lord (quoth ſhe againe) where there is ſuch often change of diſpoſition, there can bee no conſtant reſolution. Yes (quoth hée) that which is of purpoſe taken to ſhew myrth, is forced: but the naturall diſpoſition ſtill continueth firme. In déede in fewe (quoth ſhe) but not in all. Then (quoth hee) thinke mee one of thoſe fewe. My Lord (quoth ſhée) I beſeech you pardon me if I do not: for it is giuen to all by nature, to be more confident then prouident. And I anſwere, I haue receyued more fauour at your hands, in ſuffering mée to be thus familiar with you, then I am worthy, or euer hope de-

ſerued,

serued: therefore I craue pardon, hoping that you will beare with my rudenesse.

Dulcia (quoth hee) doe not aske pardon when you haue not misdone, but beleeue my words, without any question to proceede from the deapth of my true heart, which entendeth and wisheth you no lesse good then I haue vttered: for I haue found such vertue in you, that I am inthralled to that vertue, and desire to be partaker and possesse thy beutie, which hath made mee your affectionate friende, and intreate your loue, then that which I desire nothing more. My Lord (replyed *Dulcia*,) my loue and duetie is such, that I will not refuse any commaund you shall impose vpon mee.

Dulcia (quoth hee) it is not such loue as is commaunded by dutie, nor such friendship as riseth from feare, but such kinde loue as proceedeth (betwixt faithfull friendes) from the yelding consent of a true heart, and such a loue as hath a further respect then that common duty: for if you knewe with what feruencie I desired your sweete consent to this loue, you would pittie my torments.

My Lord (replyed shee) I beseech your Honour do not seeke to enthrall mee in loues bands, that am free, and am assured your fancie cannot like of one farre vnworthie that high fauour you speake of, but suffer me rather to continue in my peacefull estate, that esteeme my selfe farre from euer enioying such happinesse, as to be beloued of my superiour, being alreadie so farre bound vnto you in all humblenesse, that you shall not commaund me any thing that agreeth with modestie, but I will performe the same. Speake you from your heart (quoth *Marcellus*) I do my Lord (quoth she.) Then (sais hee) I commaund you to loue me: and if that be too harsh a word, I intreate and desire you, yeelde me loue for that true loue I beare you, being such as is grounded vpon vertue, and without spot or blemish of dishonours staine, entending nothing that may disagree with your modestie, but to make you my equall, my companion, and my dearely espoused wife: therefore do but yeeld to loue me, and thou shalt thereby expell many cares from my heart, which otherwise will increase to my euerlasting torment.

O my Lord (quoth *Dulcia*) I beseech you account me one that will indeuour in all dutie to deserue that honour you entend me, which I see so many impossibilities to hinder, that it quite discourageth mee from the least hope of that felicitie. So you will loue me, I care not for

impoſſibilities, neyther ſhall anie miſerie alter my conſtant reſolution. With that hee imbraced her in his armes, who gaue a ſilent conſent intermingled with teares, proceeding from her tender heart: with whom *Marcelius* ſtaied ſome time, ſpending the time in many friendly conferences, that *Dulcia* was conſtrained by his entreaties, and her owne yeelding heart, to giue her conſent: both theyr intents being grounded vpon no other purpoſe, but that which is vertuous and chaſte.

Parismenos being departed from *Marcelius*, ſome arriued at the Maiden Tower, where hee alighted, and comming to the gardiants that kept the gate, hee ſaluted them with a courteous behauiour, & tolde them, that hee was ſent by *Maximus* theyr king, to be one of the gardiants, whom at the firſt they denyed him: then he deliuered his Letter, which they hauing read, accepted him for one of theyr fellowes, without any doubt or miſtruſt.

When hee had obtained his deſire in this, with ſuch proſperous ſucceſſe, he began to comfort himſelfe with hope of further good fortune, continuing all that night amongſt the reſt of the gardiants, & not once offering any behauiour which might breed ſuſpition: but behaued himſelfe moſt carefully, both in all his words and deeds, as hee had a good reaſon: for that they were very circumſpect, and almoſt by reaſon of the ſtrickt charge the King had giuen them, ready to ſuſpect each other. All the next day continued hee in that ſorte, without anie meeting of the Eunuches: but on the third day hee met two of them together in a place moſt conuenient, and ſaluted them moſt kindely, who marueiling what he ſhould bee, for that he was a ſtranger, began preſently to be icalous of him: but he perceyuing the ſame, tolde them, that hee had a ſecret meſſage vnto them from the king: and withall, a letter vnder his hand and ſignet to the gardiants, which he ſhewed them. But to you (quoth hee) the King hath ſent me with this meſſage, that you ſhall admit mee at all times to *Angelicas* preſence, whome you haue the cuſtodie off, though vnknowne to any but your ſelues: which hee told me likewiſe, hee gaue you a ſpeciall charge to conceale from the reſt of the gardiants, and hath vppon the truſt hee hath repoſed in mee, giuen mee authoritie with you to haue her cuſtodie. The Eunuches hauing heard his meſſage, and withall, the kings priuie ſeale to the Letter, written in his behalfe, could not chuſe but giue credence to the ſame, ſuppoſing that none was priuie to *Angelicas* being there but the king, that they made no doubt but that hee was ſent by him: but would not truſt him, vntill they had

conſulted

conſulted with the reſt of their fellowes: to whom they declared the truth of all he had told them, who in generall admitted him to their ſocietie.

Pariſmenos thought himſelfe moſt happie to have attained this felicitie, where likewiſe he behaued himſelf moſt carefully, telling them that hee had a meſſage of ſecrecie to declare to her from the King, which they made no doubt of, nor never denied. When he ſpied his fitteſt opportunitie, which was, when *Angelica* was walking alone in a priuate garden, hauing all the libertie ſhe had, and the Eunuches were gone to diſport themſelues, and had put him alone in truſt with the key that conducted to her chamber, he vnlocked the doore, and ſhutting the ſame againe, he came to her chamber, where he durſt not be ſo bolde as enter, before he had knockt. *Anna* being alone in the chamber, hearing one knocke, came to the doore: and eſpying *Pariſmenos* in Armor, with his ſword girt to his ſide (which he never left off, being in euery poynt armed but his head) marueiled what he ſhuld be: to whom he ſaid, Faire Damozel, marueil not to ſee me in Armor, which ſhal neuer offend you, but ſtill be imployed in your defence. I haue knockt, preſuming no further without licence: the cauſe of my comming is, to deliuer a meſſage vnto the Lady *Angelica* from *Marcelius*. All this time, *Anna* had diligently beheld him: perſwading her ſelfe, ſhe had ſeene him before, that ſhe made him this anſwere. Sir knight, if you come from *Marcelius* you ſhall bee welcome to my Lady: therefore I pray you come in, and I will conduct you to the place where ſhe is.

Then ſhe brought him down a paire of ſtayres, into the garden where *Angelica* was; who ſate at the farther end thereof, in a moſt beauie and diſcomfortable ſort, ſeeming to be quite giuen ouer to ſorrowe, leaning her elbowe vpon her knees, and her head vpon her hand, with her backe towards them, and hearing them comming behind her, with a ſuddaine ſtart raiſed her ſelfe from her ſeate, wherewith her heart panted within her: and *Pariſmenos* humbling himſelfe vpon his knee, ſaid, Pardon me not diuine Lady, to behold the mappe of ſorrow, created to endure euerlaſting miſerie: the moſt worthie knight *Marcelius* hath ſente me hither, whoſe fauour hath cauſed me to be thus bold, who hartily ſaluteth himſelfe to you by me. *Angelica* all this while diligently beheld him, oft changing her countenance, being procured by the diuerſitie of thoughts: for ſhe ſuppoſed it ſhould be the knight of *Fame*, for that hee came from *Marcellus*; but he was ſo mightily altered, that ſhe was in doubt thereof,

Aſſone as he had ended thoſe fewe words, ſhe ſaide: Are you not the knight of *Fame*? I am the ſame moſt deare Lady (quoth he) with that her heart leapt for ioy, and ſhe tooke him moſt louingly by the hande, deſiring him to ariſe, ſaying: I am glad to ſee you againe, which I feared I ſhould neuer haue done. Then preſently procured by ioy for his ſight, and griefe to thinke of her owne bondage, a flood of Chriſtall teares iſſued from her eyes: which attainted his heart with extreame griefe, that he ſtood like a man ſenſeleſſe, and cõtinued in his thoughts: and ſuch paſſions oppreſt her heart, that ſhe was ſcarce able to vphold her ſelfe from falling, which cauſed the water with violence drawne from his manly heart, ſtand in his eyes, which neuer before by no accident were affent: and ſeeing her in that wofull eſtate, could not chuſe but folde his arme with a fearefull touch about her ſlender waſte to vphold her, whileſt *Anna* ran for ſome comfortable water to reuiue her withall: but comming to her ſelfe againe, ſhe leant her head in his boſome, who put his hand betwixt her precious temples, to keepe it from touching his colde and hard Armour, vttering theſe ſpeeches. Oh how vnfortunat am I, that by my diſquiet haue procured you this diſquiet, but before he could ſay more, ſhe anſwered: Not were you hence, my griefe would be far greater. It is not your preſence hath done this, but my owne hearts cares that are ſtill allotted to be my greateſt comfort: but thinke your ſelfe moſt welcome to me, and your preſence more delightfull then any others whatſoeuer. Moſt vertuous Lady quoth he) your kindneſſe is ſo farre beyond my deſert, that I knowe my ſelfe altogither vnable to render ſufficient thankes for, which I haue borne often made acquainted withall, by the worthy *Marcellus*, and now finde kindly ratified by your owne heauenly voyce, which yeelde mee that vndeſerued fauour as ſhall binde me in all dutiful bonds of ſeruice to your command. If quoth ſhe) I ſhould be otherwiſe then loue you, you might account me diſcourteous: as if I ſhould denie my words paſt to *Marcellus* (who loueth you ſo well, that he wot I knowe conceale nothing from you) you might account me vntrue: but ſeeing you haue well deſerued the one and are by his meanes made priuie to the other, I cannot now ſtand vpon new termes of denyall, but yeelde my ſelfe in all honorable ſort to your cuſtodie. Moſt fayre Lady quoth he) if I proue not thankfull, heauen graunt my good deeds may be rewarded with ill: if I remaine not euerlaſtingly true, let comfort hate my ſoule, the earth denounce my body, and terror afflict my conſcience: if

ther

euer I refuse perill, hazard of life, torment, or other miserie for your sake, let al peril, hazard of life, torment and misery, be my chiefest comfort: if my loue continue not constant, my faith firme, and my thoughts cleare of disloyaltie, let those I loue hate me: let all men abhorre me, and euery creature seeke my destruction. Gentle Knight (quoth shee) your words I do constantly beleeue: therefore be you assured likewise of my resolution, which is to rest my selfe wholely vpon your vertues: with that they parted so pure a maiden kisse betwixt them, beeing the first that euer she had giuen or he receiued, that both their hearts seemed to enterchange the others place, and to part from their louing brest with a soft breathing sigh, more sweete then if all the vnited perfumes in the world had bene met betwixt their rosiate lips. By this time *Anna* was returned, hauing spent her labour in vaine, for that *Angelica* was safe. Then *Parismenos* taking her by the arme, led her vp into her lodging, which when he had done, *Angelica* desired him to declare by what meanes he had attained that liberty to come to her. And he said, I am amongst the rest, one of your keepers: for behold I haue the key that alone cōducteth to your lodging: the Eunuches haue put me in trust withall, who are now gone about some recreation they haue in hand: then he declared vnto her the truth of all, and of *Maximus* pollicie, and how he had caused *Dulcia* to supply her roome at the Court, who was of euery degree taken for her selfe. *Angelica* hearing his report, forced a smile from her carefull hart, which she had not done many a day before. Desiring him likewise to declare his trauels after he had escaped out of the Lyons den, which hee did in euery respect.

When *Angelica* heard that he was sonne to *Parismus* and *Laurana*, whose Fame resounded in euery place, and that he was sprung of two such kingly houses, her heart was filled with exceeding ioy: which she exprest by giuing him many kind welcomes: vttering these speeches. My deare knight (quoth she) I reioyce to heare that you haue found your princely parents. But yet I would you had kept the same from my knowledge as yet, because that you might haue had triall of my good will in your vnknowne estate, in which you were as deare to me, as you shall be if you were the highest Monarch of the world. But how happie should I be, if I might in quiet enioy your presence, which I know not how you will effect. Deare Lady (quoth he) there resteth nothing but your consent: which if you vouchsafe to grant, then I do

not doubt but ſome to bring you out of this place without any hazard of your perſon Oh ſweete *Pariſmenos*, the thraldome I haue long endured, maketh me deſirous of libertie, that am almoſt tired with conceit of my fathers credulitie, to much addicted to haine report: eſpecially relying vpon your vertuous diſpoſition, and deſirous to be ruled and gouerned by your wiſedome, whom I haue choſen for my onely delight: I am moſt willing to do whatſoeuer you ſhall counſell me to, reſting in aſſured confidence, that you will no way impaire my honor, which I reſpect more then my life: but reſt at my diſpoſition in ſeeking any other aſſurance then my promiſe. I beſeech you quoth he) let no euil conceit of me take place in your heart, but be aſſured, that ſo long as I breath, I will not erre from your commaund, in the leaſt vnduti full reſpect, but reſt ſo fully and wholely obedient to your behests, that ſooner then I will do or thinke a thought that ſhal diſagree to your deſire, this breath ſhall leaue my breſt, and my vitall ſpirits giue vp their latest gaſpe. After theſe ſpeeches ended, and *Angelicas* minde fully ſatisfied, they ſpent ſome time in familiar conference, intermingled with many kinde behauiours, to the further confirmation of both their loues: till at laſt, *Pariſmenos* enforced, in regard of their ſafeties, departed to his charge, whither he was come before they were returned: and at their returne finding him there, they made no doubt of him, but tooke the charge vpon them againe, entring into *Angelicas* chamber, to prouide her ſuch things as were neceſſarie. Who becauſe they ſhould not finde any alteration, put on her former manner of ſadneſſe, which before proceeded from the depth of care, but now ſhe aſſumed to auoid ſuſpition. *Pariſmenos* he went downe amongſt the reſt of the knights that kept the Caſtle, keeping companie ſometimes with them, and ſometimes with the Eunuches, that neither of them knew of his familiaritie with the other, but both accepted him as one of their company, that he had the garding of the entrance into the Caſtle, and alſo the ſecret keeping of *Angelica*, with the Eunuches: neither of them both ſuſpecting his intent.

Thus continued he amongſt them ſome three dayes, in which time he came often to *Angelica*, and had conference with her: at laſt his turne came, that he muſt both watch with one of the Eunuches, and alſo at the Caſtle entrance, where likewiſe, neuer but two kept the watch, which fell out according to *Pariſmenos* deſire: whoſe hart was much troubled to effect this buſineſſe, deuiſing how he ſhould be rid

of

of his two fellowes, the Eunuch and the other, that kept the entrance, being unwilling to be esteemed a murderer, his hands being yet never guiltie of blood: at last his desire to gette *Angelica* from thence, overcame that care, and hee resolued rather to be their executioner, then bee disappointed of his intent: when the time that he should take his place to watch was come, and hee and the Eunuch alone, the rest being gone to their lodging, *Parismenos* being in talke with the Eunuch, suddenlie muffled him in his gowne, so close, that none could heare him crie, and thrust his sworde quyte through him, which hee did with such expedition, that his fellowes never heard their noyse, and taking the keye from him, tooke him under his arme, and flong him into a darke corner of the Tower. When he had done this, he hasted to his other place of charge: where when hee came, he found his fellow watch-man slaying for him, but fast a sleepe, with the keyes of the Castle gate lying by him: whom *Parismenos* caught in his armes, and before he could recouer his sences, threw him from the battlements into the lake, where he was drowned: which done, hee went backe to *Angelicas* Chamber, and opening the doore, entred in, and found *Angelica* in her bed fast asleepe, whome was in minde at the first to have awaked her, but beholding her in so sweete a slumber, the awfull regard he bare to her would not suffer him to be so bolde, but still he stood by her a good space, being desirous to awake her, yet fearfull to disturbe her quiet rest: at last, *Anna* awaked, who continually was her bedfellow. Who seeing *Parismenos* in the chamber, at that unseasonable houre, styrring her selfe to speake to him, awaked *Angelica*, who likewise casting her eye suddenly on him, was somewhat agast at his being there, but shee kneeling downe by her beddes side, said: Pardon mee I beseech you this boldenesse, now is the time that you may depart, and without any let or molestation, for that my selfe haue alone the keeping of the entrance into this Tower.

Angelica hearing his speaches tolde him, shee would presently be readie: then *Anna* suddenly started out of the bedde and apparelled her selfe. And *Parismenos* arising withdrewe himselfe. *Angelica* likewise made such expedition, that shee was readie before *Parismenos* wist, having attyred her selfe with most exceeding riche Ornaments. Then shee came to him and saide. Now deare friende, let vs goe, when you please: then hee tooke her by the one arme, and

Anna

Anna by the other, ſaying: Be of good comfort, and feare not, for I dare aſſure you to paſſe with quiet. After they were out of the chamber he lockt the doore againe, and toke the key with him: and from thence, led her downe to the Tower gate: and being without, laſt lockt the ſame againe after them. And being quite without the compaſſe of the Tower, *Angelicaes* heart ſeemed to leape within her for ioye, demaunding in moſt kinde ſort, whether hée would conney her, for quoth ſhée) if I ſhould be taken againe, and come to *Maximus* preſence, my torment and greefe would bee more then I am able to expreſſe. I haue quoth hée) a friende not farre hence, in whoſe truſt I dare repoſe anie ſecrete, whither I will conduct you with ſafetie: therefore, I beſeeche you be of good comfort. Manie a wearie ſteppe *Angelica* had, before ſhée came to her iourneyes ende: which at laſt they attained. When they were come to Saint *Auſtines* Chappell, *Pariſmenos* neuer left knocking vntill hée had awaked *Iabin*, who marueiling to heare one knocke at that time of the night, ſo vnlooked for, and comming to the doore, demaunded before hée would open the ſame, who was there. *Pariſmenos* made anſwere, good friends *Iabin*, open the doore, feare is none but friendes. With that *Iabin* knowing his voyce, opened the doore and let them in, with all haſte lighting a Taper, then hée came to *Pariſmenos* and embraced him, yet not knowing *Angelica*, but ſuppoſing it was ſhée, admyring her exceeding beawty, and with humble reuerence hée deſired her to accept of his poore Cell: where *Angelica* being wearie, ſeated her ſelfe vppon his bedde, being moſt glad that ſhée was eſcaped out of the Mayden Tower, where they ſpent ſome time in conference about their eſcape: when *Pariſmenos* at her requeſt, declared the manner how hée rid himſelfe from thoſe that were appointed to watche with them. Whoſe wiſedome *Angelica* greatly admyred. After manie of theſe ſweete remembrances paſt betweene them, *Angelica* and *Anna* fell both faſt a ſléepe, being wearie of their trauell: which *Pariſmenos* and *Iabin* ſeeing, they departed into the Chappell to conferre about their ſecuritie: where wee will leaue them, to ſpeake of the gardians.

CHAP. XXIIII.

How Maximus had knowledge of Angelicas eſcape. How Marcellus with Dulcia fled from the Court at Epheſus. And how Marcelus in Portellus armor came to S. Auſtins Chappell. And how Pariſmus ſent Portellus into Bohemia.

In

IN the morning the Eunuches according to theyr wonted manner, came to the place where they thought to haue found theyr fellowes, but missing them both, first maruelling therat, & afterwards conceyuing the worst, beeing apte to suspition, knockt at *Angelicas* chāber doore, but none made answer: which draue them into an exceeding perplexity of feare, then they began altogither to studie what this might meane, & going downe they espyed theyr fellow lie dead before them, whom *Parismenos* had cast ther, that *Angelica* might not see him: which ghastly sight affrighted them with deadly feare: that with an exceeding outcrie they ran downe to the Knights that kept the entrance: who maruelling at theyr sorrow, enquyred the cause therof: they declared how they found one of theyr fellowes slaine, & the knight that *Maximus* had lately sent was missing. Hee (quoth the knights) hath the keeping of the entrance: but notwithstanding, some of them fearing the worst, ranne thither, where they found neither him, nor the other knight that was appoynted to watch with him, nor the keyes of the Tower gate. With which newes, they returned backe to the rest of theyr fellowes, who by this time came all togither. At which newes, one of them said: I see no such cause of sorrow. With that one of the Eunuches said: you know not what wee haue lost, wee are all vndone: wee shall be hanged, if *Maximus* heare hereof, wee haue lost *Angelica*: with that the Knights burst into a laughter. Oh (quoth the Eunuch) laugh not at that which will bring vs all to sorrowe, wee haue lost *Angelica*, whose custodie wee hadde, though vnknowne to you: which the King commaunded vs to keep from your knowledge, for that he hadde giuen out reporte, that shee was departed with him, whom I feare me, the straunge Knight that lately arriued heere, hath carryed away from vs all. The Knights hearing his wordes, were exceedingly amazed thereat, which they were assured was true, by the rest of their fellowes. Then they went all togither vppe to *Angelicas* Chamber and breaking open the doores, they found her not, but well perceiued that shee was gone away. Then beganne the Eunuches to roare and crie out like mad men, and the Knights ran vp & down like men transformed into amazement: at last, with much adoo, they opened the gate, finding the draw-bridge letten downe: and some of them hauing horse

within the Tower, poſted euery way about the countrie, making diligent ſearche and enquirie after them, and manie of them met with olde *Iabin*, who anſwered them that he ſaw none ſuch, whome they all credited, for that hee was a man of religion which were of moſt high eſtimation with euery one in thoſe Countreyes, that they eſteemed euery word that paſt their lips, as true Oracles: by which meanes *Pariſmenos* and *Angelica* were as ſafe in his cuſtodie as could bee deuiſed. *Iabin* ſeeing ſuch a number of knights abroad, returned with that newes to his Cell, which draue *Angelica* into ſome feare and diſquiet, but *Iabin* by his comfortable aſſurances, expelld the ſame from her heart, by telling her, that if all the world were in ſearche of them, yet they would neuer ſuſpect that place. The Eunuches ſone got out of the Tower, and fled for feare of *Maximus* furie, euery man which way hee thought beſt for his own ſafetie. One of the knights poſted with all ſpeed to the Court, and comming into *Maximus* preſence, declared the whole circumſtance of this tragicall euent. Which when *Maximus* heard, hee tore his haire, ſtamped on the earth, raged and railed moſt exceedingly, calling all the Nobles and knights of his Court together, commaunding them in all haſte to arme themſelues preſently, and be in readines to goe with him, and to ſtay for him at the Court gate: then might you ſee Noblemen making haſt, ſome one way, ſome another way, ſome calling for the reſt of their Armour, hauing the one halfe on, and the other out of readineſſe: ſome in Harneſſe, ready mounted, buckling on their Helmets, others at euery poynt armed, calling for their Steedes, ſome ready mounting, halfe armed, halfe vnarmed: knights running this way, ſeruants that way, all ſtyrring and making vnwonted haſte, and euery one in a hurly burly. By this time came *Maximus* readie mounted, gyrding his ſpurres into his Steeds ſide for haſte: who was ready to make ſpeede without ſpurring, commaunding his knights to follow him: who haſted after him, not knowing why they made ſuch ſpeede, the Ladies wondred at this newes, ſome for feare of their husbands harme, for they thought ſome enemies were approached which might endanger their perſons, admyring this ſtrange accident: ſome bemoning the abſence of their louers: all in a wonderfull taſte, the Queene ſhee ſat weeping for the loſſe of her Daughter, which the King had tolde her of.

Marcelius hee only reioiced, for that he ſuppoſed *Pariſmenos* had caried from thence *Angel*, *Maximus* with all haſt arriued at the maiden Tower

where he heard the truth of all, and saw the Eunuch that was slaine, and withall was certified in what manner the straunge knight came, and how that he brought with him a Letter signed with his priuie signet. When *Maximus* heard this, he grew presently into a perswasion that it was the vnknowne knight had done that exployt, and carried away *Angelica*, then he called for the letter which one of those knights (by ill fortune more carefull then the rest, had demaunded of *Parismenos*, after he had shewen the same to the Eunuches as aforesaid) deliuered vnto him, which when *Maximus* sawe, hee presently knewe that it was *Marcellus* hand, which caused his eyes to swel with rage, that for that the night was now come, hee rested in the Tower, commaunding and desiring his Nobles and Knights to poste throughout all the Country to finde *Angelica*, commaunding two of the chiefest of his Noble men early the next morning to post to the Court and apprehend *Marcellus* as a traytor, for conspiring with a straunger to betray his life. Th[illegible] suddaine was all the Countrey spread ouer with knights [illegible] place of likelihood to harbour them. Onely *Iabins* Cell they inspected not, which was so neare the maiden Tower, and withall a place of holinesse and religion dedicated to Saint *Austine*, whom they worshipped: that of all places none of thē thought of likelihood, that they should be there: in which quest they continued very earnest all that night, and the next day.

Assoone as *Marcellus* sawe all the Knights and Nobles departed, and all the Court in an vprore, now fearing that if *Maximus* should see the Letter hee had giuen *Parismenos*, hee would knowe his hand: when all were in an exceeding vprore, he came to *Dulcia* in great hast, and told her all that had befallen, telling her, that he must now for a time leaue her: for that he knew his father would vppon sight of the Letter be so much incest against him, that it were meere fondnesse in him to stay and abide his furie: with that *Dulcias* heart panted with griefe, and her eyes melted into teares, desiring him most humbly vpon her knees, that he would not leaue her behinde, whose life would be worse then death without his presence: for my Lord (quoth shee) if you will vouchsafe me this fauour, I wil neuer forsake you for feare of any misery, perill, or torment.

Marcellus tooke her vp with a kinde kisse, telling her that hee was most exceedingly glad that she would goe with him, beeing the onely thing he most desired in the world.

Then (quoth *Dulcia*) tell me what I shall do, and I will do it presently. (Quoth hée) whilest I hold the Ladies in a talke, whose wits are now troubled, disguise your selfe, and slip out amongst them, and go to Madam *Panoras* house, and there stay for me. *Dulcia* then presently cast off her vppermost garments and put on some of the Ladies, such as she next found, and locking fast her chamber doore, went through amongst the thickest of them: who séeing her locke the doore, tooke her for one of their fellowes that had brought *Angelica* to bed: and so let her passe without suspition.

Dulcia was no sooner downe staires, but she hasted with all spéede vntill she was without the court gate, and from thence came to *Panoras* house, where she was let in by *Panora*, whō she told, that *Marcellus* had sent her thither, and would himselfe be there presently. *Panora* for his sake gaue her kinde entertainment. *Marcellus* séeing all things fall out thus prosperously, and *Dulcia* past by, which he noted, he left the Ladies, and presently went to his chamber [illegible] himselfe in one of the Getulian knights armor, having none of his own, & wēt to *Panoras* house, where he found *Dulcia*, and caught her in his armes with a louing embrace: and being all thrée togither, he declared to *Panora* all that had hapned, both of himselfe, *Angelica*, and *Dulcia*, and that the Knight which lodged in her house, was the Knight of *Fame*. *Parismenos* withall, requesting her secrecie and ayde, to conceale *Dulcia* from all knowledge of her beeing there, where himselfe stayed all that night: And the next day spending his time in much pleasure and kinde sort with *Dulcia*, whome hee loued most excéedingly, but without any blemish or thought of intemperancie.

Early the next morning came the two Nobles from *Maximus* to arrest *Marcellus*, thinking to haue found him there, but comming to his chamber, he was not there, nor in all the Court to bée found. Which caused an other tumult for his absence ẏ all had their minds so busied with cōceit of meditatiō why he shuld be fled, ẏ they were al in a second amazement therwith, though none at al knowing why he was fled, nor knowing what offence he had committed: the Quœne likewise, made heart sorrow for his mishap. This newes being come to the Ladies that attended *Dulcia*, in stead of *Angelica*, who thought to carrie the report of this newes to *Angelica*, but enquiring for the key of her chamber, could not heare of it: for euery one made aunswere

they hadde it not, then beganne a controuersie amongst them, enquiring who it was that came out last, but the truth thereof they could not learne, that they began to suspect each other, and that she that had the key had lost the same, and would not be knowne thereof: that at last they began to knocke first softly, and then hard, but none made answere, which drawe them all into an extreame perplexitie, and with much ado, to rid themselues of that fear, they got open the doore, where at their comming they could not finde *Angelica*, but found some of her ornaments cast in the middest of the floore: that then with wringing their hands, tearing their haire, and rending their ornaments, they made such an outcrie and exclamation, that all the Court rung therof: which caused the Queene, the Nobles, and almost all the whole court gather to that place, where the Queene being come, and knowing the cause of their sorrow, sat downe amongst them, oppress with care, and uttered these speeches. Peace, peace, giue ouer this vaine lamentation, for you know not for whom you mourne, it was not *Angelica* you had the custodie of, therefore cease your laments, and giue me leaue to mourne, that haue iust cause: who am a partie in all these woes, that at once haue lost the companie of both my deare children, and al procured by *Maximus* mistrust, who left *Angelica* in the maiden Tower, who is stolen from thence, and now my sonne *Marcellus* with *Dulcia* is likewise fled. Aye me, what sorrow is this? whose griefe may be compared to mine? was euer any so miserable as I am made, that at one instant haue lost my comfort, my children, my ioyes and delight? with that such a passion of griefe ouerwhelmed her hart, that her speech abruptly brake off, and more she would haue said but could not, that the ladies tooke her vp, being fallen into a deadly trance, and conuried her to her bed.

Thus was the whole Court and Citie replete with care, euery one uttering their fancies: the younger for accusing *Maximus* of crueltie, alleaging that he was cause of those cares: the elder condemning the two young Princes of lewdnesse and lightnesse, that would enter into these actions without their parents consent. And two Noblemen returned againe to *Maximus* with these newes, which added newe cares to his troubled head, ỹ *Angelicas* escape did not so much greeue him, as that *Marcellus* should both be Authorin her escape, and also would make so base a choyse of *Dulcia*, with whom, all were assured

he was fled, neither did all theſe ſo much vexe him, as that he was diſappointed of all meanes to revenge theſe wrongs.

Maximus continued many dates in the maiden Tower, calling togither all the knights of the land, commaunding them to make all diligent ſearch, and to appoynt ſome that ſhould ſtay in every place of the countrie, and examine every paſſenger, for that his minde gaue him, *Angelica* and *Marcellus* were within *Getulia*: This buſineſſe was ſo ſpædily and ſo exactly performed, that it was impoſſible for them to eſcape vnknowne or vndeſcried.

Marcellus the next night after all the tumults, hauing by many perſwaſions and intreaties wonne *Dulcia* to ſtaye with *Panora*, and with promiſe of his ſpædy returne, armed himſelfe in the Armour hee had gotten and departed from thence, with intent to go to Saint *Auſtines* Chappell, where hee was ſure hee ſhoulde heare of *Pariſmenos*, and by the way met with many of the Getulian knights, who knewe him not but by his armour, toke him to be a Getulian knight named *Portellus*, whoſe armour *Marcellus* had put on: this *Portellus* was a knight of the kings Court, who not long ſince was departed into *Libia* without the knowledge of any but *Marcellus*, who had ſent him to viewe *Venolas* beautie, and to learne if he could the originall of that accuſation was laide againſt the knight of *Fame*, in whoſe armour *Marcellus* paſt without ſuſpition, being taken of all for *Portellus*.

Early the next morning he arrived at S. *Auſtines* Chappell, where he would neither knocke nor enter, vntill he was ſure there were none to deſcrie him. When *Iabin* firſt ſawe him, his heart was tormented with feare, demanding what he would haue. Feare not *Iabin* (quoth he) I am your friend *Marcellus*: with that he entred into the Chappel, whom *Iabin* would not ſuffer to goe further, vntill hee had ſeene his face, which when he beheld, he embraced him moſt lovingly, and without ſpeaking a word brought him into his Cell, where was *Pariſmenos*, *Angelica*, and *Anna*, who all at once beholding him, and hee them, embraced each other with exceeding ioy, being ſo glad they had met, that *Angelica* wept for ioy, *Pariſmenos* ſurfetted with delight, and *Marcellus* heart was filled with exceeding content: when theſe ſtormes of ioy were paſt and ſomewhat calmed, *Marcellus* declared to them all that had happened, and how that *Maximus* had ſet moſt diligent ſpies in every corner of the countrie, and withall, declared the cauſe why he was fled, the manner, and with whom, his love to *Dulcia*,

... how hée had left her with *Panora*, and how happily hee had passed vnsuspected in *Portellus* Armour, which when they heard, they all applauded, and reioyced at his fortunate successe: to whom *Angelica* said with a merry countenance: *Dulcia* hath lost nothing by assuming my name and habit, but thereby hath woonne a constant knights loue, and may hereafter by that meanes come to bée a Queene. Indéed *Marcellus* whatsoeuer others may say, I perswade and assure my selfe, you haue gotten a vertuous, beatifull, chast, kinde, and louing Ladies loue, whose good parts I haue often commended in my secrete thoughts, but now am glad that I haue so good opportunitie to speak of them in your hearing: what though shée bee not of kingly race, her vertues are such as may beseeme the best Lady in the world.

Marcellus was glad to heare *Angelica* so much commend his beloued *Dulcia*, that hée said: Indéede Sister I haue chosen *Dulcia*, I loue her, and will héereafter bee true to her, for her beautie, vertue, and good parts, do please mee so much, that if I liue to enioy the *Getulian* crowne, shée shalbe my Queene: withall, I am glad you haue met your knight, of whose company I am sure you are not a little glad. With that *Angelica* blusht, and hée saide: Nay Sister blush not, for hée hath better deserued your loue, then *Dulcia* hath mine.

In these and such like communications, they spent the rest of that day, studying and deuising what might bee their best course to take in these troublesome affaires.

After that *Marcellus* had stayed some time with *Parismenos* and *Angelica* in Saint *Austines* Chappell, hee againe departed in *Portellus* armour towards *Dulcia*, where hee arriued to her exceeding comfort, without suspition, wishing that shee had beene with *Angelica*, that hee might haue enioyed both her and their companie together.

After *Marcellus* was departed, *Parismenos* and *Angelica* beganne to studie which way they might escape *Maximus* crueltie, béeing both desirous to go into *Bohemia*, but they knewe not how to passe without béeing discouered, for that the King still continued his diligent searche: and beũdes, if that let had not beene, yet the iourney was so long and daungerous, that *Parismenos* was vnwilling to indaunger her person and health thereby, that hée was drawne to an exceeding astonishment what were best to bée done: that béeing vnskilfull of themselues what to determine off, they asked olde *Iabines* counsell, who presentlie told them, that if they liked his simple fare, and that homely Cell

where though they were not daintilie ſerued, yet they were quiet, that hee thought it their beſt courſe to ſtaye there ſtill vntill *Maximus* were out of hope to finde them, and had giuen ouer his ſearch, or at the leaſt vntill *Marcellus* were returned, whoſe counſell they both allowed and followed.

Maximus ſtill remeained in the Maiden Tower, fretting his heart with vexation and griefe, being put out of all comfort by his Knights that daily returned without any newes, that in the ende hee was tyed with griefe, and fared like one in a deſperate eſtate: but by the counſell of his Nobles, after much trouble and long ſearche, hee returned to the Court where the Quæne was, to comfort her: who at his comming he found verie ſicke, and in very weake eſtate, being procured by the greefe ſhee had conceiued for her children loſſe. *Maximus* ſeeing her in that dangerous eſtate, began to comfort her with manie perſwaſions: but ſhee was ſo impatient and ſo full of griefe, that ſhee vttered theſe ſpæches. Comfort, my Lord, commeth now out of ſeaſon, when our greefes are paſt remedie, which you might haue ſaiued when time ſerued: it is your curioſitie and fonde ſuſpect, that hath bred theſe miſchaunces, you giue to much credit to that foule enchauntreſſe ſpæches, which your ſelfe deſire to proue true, or elſe you would neuer take thoſe cruell courſes you haue done with your children. Might you not often haue married *Angelica* according to your deſire, to many Honourable and great perſonages? what if ſhee be now married, can that indaunger your life, vnleſſe you will bee the wilfull actor thereof your ſelfe? but by your ſeueritie you haue done this, which is now impoſſible to be recouered.

Maximus heart at theſe ſpæches began to melt with kenitis, and his owne conſcience began to condemne himſelfe, that now hee repenteth the ſeueritie hee had vſed, and accuſed himſelfe of follie, to giue ſuch credit to the enchauntreſſe ſpæches, that hee proteſted if hee had his children againe, hee would not reſtraine them ſo much of their libertie, but that hee would let them make choyce according to their owne fancies: and in this heauy eſtate wee will leaue him: deuiſing what meanes to worke by gentleneſſe to call them home againe.

Marcelius all this while continued with *Dulcia* in Lady *Pa-noras* houſe, and nowe hearing that *Maximus* was returned from the Maiden Tower, and had giuen ouer ſearche, as hopeles to finde either

Angelica,